

PART OF A  
MAN'S LIFE

—

THOMAS WENTWORTH  
HIGGINSON



*The Woman's Literary Club*



The  
Thoreau Library  
of Walter Harding











PART OF A MAN'S LIFE







*Copyright 1902 by J. L. Parity, Boston.*

Thomas Wentworth Higginson



# PART OF A MAN'S LIFE

BY

THOMAS WENTWORTH  
HIGGINSON

"The uttered part of a man's life, let us always repeat, bears to the unuttered, unconscious part a small unknown proportion. He himself never knows it, much less do others."—Carlyle's Essay on Scott.



BOSTON AND NEW YORK  
HOUGHTON, MIFFLIN AND COMPANY  
*The Riverside Press, Cambridge*  
1906

COPYRIGHT 1905 BY THOMAS WENTWORTH HIGGINSON

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

*Published October 1905*

SECOND IMPRESSION

## CONTENTS

I. The Sunny Side of the Transcendental Period . . . . .	1
II. The Child and his Dreams . . . . .	26
III. English and American Cousins . . . . .	48
IV. American Audiences . . . . .	73
V. The Aristocracy of the Dollar . . . . .	93
VI. "Intensely Human" . . . . .	114
VII. Letters of Mark . . . . .	139
VIII. Books Unread . . . . .	155
IX. Butterflies in Poetry . . . . .	179
X. Wordsworthshire . . . . .	203
XI. The Close of the Victorian Epoch . . . . .	226
XII. Una Hawthorne . . . . .	249
XIII. History in Easy Lessons . . . . .	271
XIV. The Cowardice of Culture . . . . .	288
Index . . . . .	305



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
Thomas Wentworth Higginson . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Facsimile of Fragment of Manuscript of Carlyle's French Revolution, and Autograph . . . . .	2
Thomas Carlyle . . . . .	6
Facsimile of Letter from Edward Everett . . . . .	10
Facsimile of Letter from Henry D. Thoreau . . . . .	16
Matthew Arnold . . . . .	20
Facsimile of Letter from Matthew Arnold . . . . .	22
Facsimile of Letter from Robert Browning . . . . .	24
Philosophers . . . . .	28
A Consolation Entertainment . . . . .	48
James Anthony Froude . . . . .	50
Facsimile of Letter from James Anthony Froude . . . . .	56
Facsimile of Letter from John Greenleaf Whittier . . . . .	58
Henry Ward Beecher . . . . .	80
Facsimile of Letter from Charles Sumner . . . . .	82
Theodore Parker . . . . .	104
Mordecai Receipt . . . . .	120
Facsimile of Letter from Wendell Phillips . . . . .	128
Facsimile of Letter from J. H. Lane . . . . .	130
Facsimile of Letter from William Brunson . . . . .	152
Facsimile of Letter from Edward Fitzgerald . . . . .	164

---

Victor Hugo . . . . .	182
Poets of the Present Day . . . . .	212
Facsimile of Letter from Sainte-Beuve . . . . .	226
Facsimile of Letter from Stepniak . . . . .	228
Facsimile of Letter from Darwin . . . . .	230
Facsimile of Letter from Lord Houghton . . . . .	232
The Trump Card . . . . .	236
Una Hawthorne . . . . .	254
Charles Robert Darwin . . . . .	270
Facsimile of Letter from Francis Parkman . . . . .	286
Facsimile of Letter from James Russell Lowell . . . . .	300
Colonel George E. Waring . . . . .	302



PART OF A MAN'S LIFE



# I

## THE SUNNY SIDE OF THE TRANSCENDENTAL PERIOD

**I**T happened to me once to be summoned on short notice to the house of a most agreeable neighbor, then Dean of the Episcopal Theological School at Cambridge, to assist in entertaining two English guests unexpectedly arrived. These guests were a husband and wife, both authors, and visiting this country for the first time. They proved to belong to that class of British travelers who, as the genial Longfellow used to say, come hither, not so much to obtain information about America, as to communicate it. We were scarcely seated at table when the little lady — for they were both very small in person — looked up at me confidently and said, “Don’t you think it rather a pity that all the really interesting Americans seem to be dead?” It was difficult for a living man to maintain any resistance against a conclusion so decisive, and all I remember is that our talk became a series of

obituaries. To those might now be added, were it needful, similar memorials of my fair questioner, of her husband, and of our gracious host himself, since these also have passed away. And why should such remembrances be sad, one may well ask, if they are brought together in a sunny spirit, and have for their motto, not the mournfulness of old-time epitaphs, but rather the fine outburst of Whitman's brief song of parting, "Joy, Shipmate, Joy." Even the gloomy Carlyle had to admit that "there is no life of a man faithfully recorded, but is a heroic poem of its sort, rhymed or unrhymed."

Those who followed the chorus of affectionate praise which surrounded the celebration of Emerson's hundredth birthday must have felt very keenly its unlikeness to the ever renewing tumult of discussion around the grave of Carlyle. The difference was in great measure the penalty of temperament, or in Emerson's case, its reward. No one recognized this more fully than Carlyle himself when he said sadly to me, "Ah! the dear Emerson! He thinks that everybody in the world is as good as himself;" just as he had said to Longfellow, years before, that Emerson's first visit to him was "like the visit of an angel." It is clear that the whole atmosphere of Emerson's memory breathes

[Facsimile of fragment of manuscript of Carlyle's French Revolution.]

Cherville, President Stephen, what will he do: they have two days more of  
it, by <sup>best</sup> instant Revolutionary law. The ~~People~~ <sup>indeed</sup> Gallies already murmur. If this Deatin, were to ~~be~~  
escape your methwork! — My cousin, to <sup>use them</sup> ~~indeed~~ <sup>what a</sup> ~~stratagem~~

Yours always truly

J. Carlyle





sunshine, but it gradually appears, in tracing it farther, that much of this traditional atmosphere extends—at least for those who lived through it and perhaps for their children also—over the whole intellectual period of which Emerson was the best representative. This period is now usually and doubtless vaguely known in America as the period of Transcendentalism. Unsatisfying as the word, when thus applied, must be, it may yet be employed for want of a better, without entering too profoundly into its source or its services. Originally a philosophic term, it can be used for the present to indicate a period.

The word "Transcendentalism" was apparently first employed by the leader among modern German philosophers, Immanuel Kant, to designate the intuitive method of reaching truth, as apart from the experimental or sensational method of Locke, which had held its own so stoutly. Kant died in 1804, but the word was handed on, so modified and, we might perhaps say, battered by later German thinkers, that it would now be useless to attempt to employ it further than as a landmark or guidepost, as it will be used here. If we wish to fix the birth-time of the American period bearing that name, we may place it somewhere near the publication of Emerson's "Nature" (1836),

or the appearance of the first number of "The Dial" (July, 1840), or the formation of the "Brook Farm Institute," or "Community" as it was oftenest called, near Boston (1841). The special interest of this household for the world was not so much because it gave a new roof-tree for a little domestic experiment,—the Moravians and Shakers had long before done that,—but rather because it offered also an atmosphere of freedom.

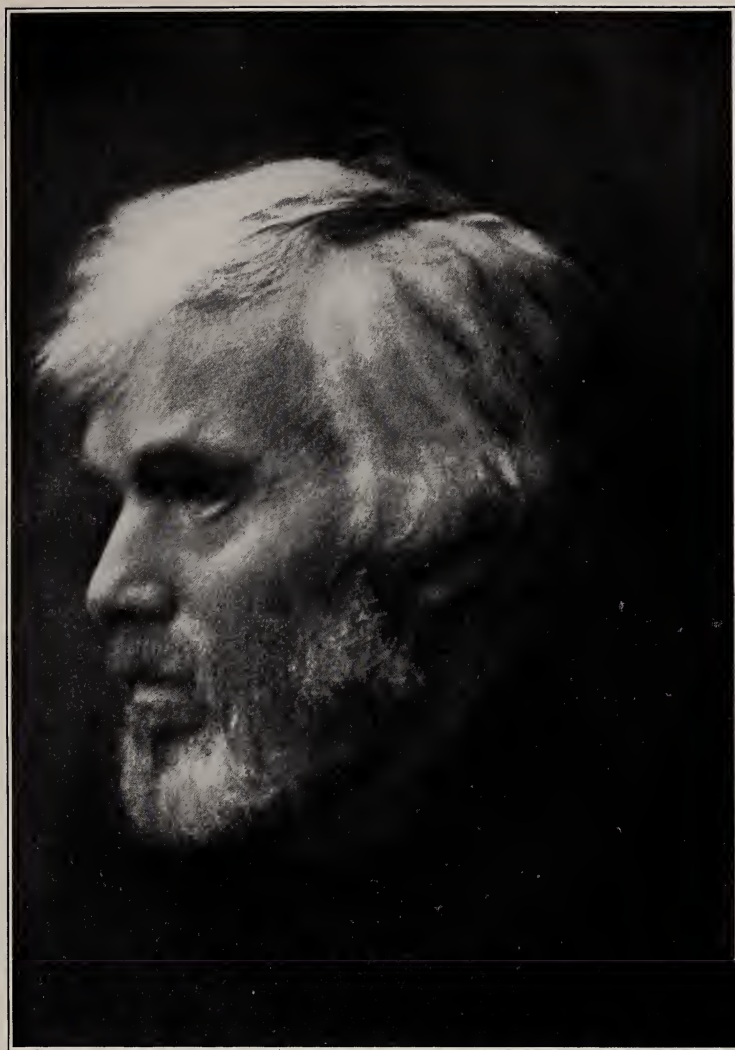
It visibly relaxed restraint, suggested a substitute for the strict Puritan tradition, brought together the most open and hopeful minds of the community, sometimes uniting with them the fanatics, still oftener the do-nothings; giving conservatives and radicals alike something to talk about. Those whose names are now oftenest associated with the Brook Farm enterprise, as Emerson, Alcott, Margaret Fuller Ossoli, and William Henry Channing, never actually belonged to it; while its most noted members, as Hawthorne and George William Curtis, were there only during the first year. The only narrator who has written his personal remembrances of it was but a second-year member; and its more systematic historian, Mr. Lindsay Swift, says justly of it, "There was a distinct beginning, a fairly coherent progress, but a vague termination." He also touches the

keynote of the whole history when he says in his preface, "It is more than fifty years since the last dweller in that pleasant domain turned his reluctant steps away from its noble illusions, and toward the stress of realities; but from no one of this gracious company has ever come the admission that Brook Farm was a failure." Surely this is much to say.

In going still farther back for the historic origins of American transcendentalism, we must recognize the earlier influence of Burns, Coleridge, and Wordsworth, as laying the foundations for all this new atmosphere of thought and living. This is a fact of much interest as compared with the first reception of all these poets in their own country. The "London Monthly Review" — the leading critical magazine in England before the "Edinburgh Review" appeared — pronounced Burns's first volume to be "disgusting," and "written in an unknown tongue," the editor adding his own partial version of "The Cotter's Saturday Night" translated into the English language! The same editor pronounced Coleridge's "Ancient Mariner" "the strangest story of a cock and bull that we ever saw on paper . . . a rhapsody of unintelligible wildness and incoherence, of which we do not perceive the drift," while "Christabel" was described by him as

"rude, unfeatured stuff." Even of Wordsworth's "Tintern Abbey" the same critic complains that it is "tinctured with gloomy, narrow, and unsociable ideas of seclusion from the commerce of the world;" and yet on turning the pages of Dennie's "Portfolio" published in Philadelphia simultaneously with the English periodical just quoted (1786), we find these very poets and, indeed, these identical poems hailed as the opening of a new intellectual era. Such, indeed, it was, but an era heralded in America with an eagerness, cordiality, and, above all, a cheerfulness such as might well belong to a fresher and more youthful life.

Then followed Carlyle's great influence through his "Sartor Resartus," whose American editor, Charles Stearns Wheeler, I can well remember to have watched with timid reverence at the Boston Athenæum Library as he transcribed that exciting work from the pages of "Fraser's Magazine," for its first reprinting in book form. Still more must be recalled the influence of Kant and Fichte, Hegel and Schleiermacher, with the more transient eclectic philosophy of the Frenchmen Cousin and Jouffroy, whose books were translated from the French and used for a time as text-books in Harvard College and elsewhere, as early as 1839. The German poets also were just



THOMAS CARLYLE





being translated, though of course in a fragmentary way, in America, especially Goethe, Schiller, and even Heine; and the poetic writings of Hoffmann, Novalis, Jean Paul Richter, and others lent their influence, first under the lead of Carlyle, and afterwards through direct American translators, the Rev. Charles T. Brooks and Mrs. Eliza Buckminster Lee. Many of these poetic translations appeared in "The Dial," and the prose versions in the series of volumes, fourteen in all, entitled "Specimens of Foreign Standard Literature," planned and edited by George Ripley. To him especial attention should be given, since if the sunny atmosphere of the period was personally incarnated in any one, it was undoubtedly in him.

George Ripley was the single consummate type, during that period, of that rarest of combinations, the natural scholar and the cheery good fellow. Evidence of the former quality might be found in the catalogue, had it only been preserved, of his library sold in aid of the organization of Brook Farm, and universally recognized as the best German library then to be found in America; while the clearest tribute to the other trait was the universal regret said to have been felt among his clerical brethren at the loss of the gayest compan-

ion and best story-teller in their ranks. He it was who, with Emerson, Hedge, and George Putnam, called together the first meeting of "what was named in derision the Transcendental Club," as Hedge writes; and he it was who resigned his clerical charge in 1840, with a view to applying to some form of action the newer and ampler views of life.

Even Dr. Channing, then the intellectual leader of Boston, had some conference with Ripley as to whether it would be possible to bring cultivated and thoughtful people together and make a society that deserved the name. Mr. Swift in his admirable book on "Brook Farm" reminds us that there was a consultation on this subject at the house of Dr. John C. Warren, then the leading physician of Boston, which ended "with an oyster supper, crowned by excellent wines." Undoubtedly, on that occasion, George Ripley told his best stories and laughed his heartiest laugh. But we may be sure that his jubilant cheeriness was no less when he turned his back on all this and left the flesh-pots of Egypt for a dinner of herbs at Brook Farm.

There is something very interesting and not wholly accidental in the way in which a German influence was thus early making itself felt in this country and contributing, as a matter

of course, to its sunshine. This clearly came from a double influence, the appearance in America of a number of highly educated Germans, of whom Lieber, Follen, and Beck were types, who were driven from their country by political uproar about 1825; and, on the other hand, the return of a small number of highly educated Americans, at a period a little earlier, who had studied at the German universities. The most conspicuous among these men were Edward Everett, George Ticknor, George Bancroft, and Joseph Green Cogswell, the latter being the organizer of our first great American library, the Astor. Their experience and influence had a value quite inestimable, and the process of their training is shown unmistakably in a remarkable series of letters from them to my father, then steward of Harvard College, and in some respects their sponsor; letters published by myself in the "Harvard Graduates' Magazine" for September, 1897. In one of these letters, the cool and clear-headed Everett, going from the Continent to inspect the universities of Oxford and Cambridge, expressed the opinion that America had at that date (1819) "nothing to learn from England [in regard to university methods], but everything to learn from Germany," and I have been more than once assured by English scholars,

on quoting to them the passage, that the remark was, at the period indicated, absolutely true. It is, however, also true that Mr. Everett himself practically recognized a subsequent change in conditions, when he sent his own son, forty years later, to an English and not to a German university.

It must not be supposed that the "Disciples of the Newness," as they liked to call themselves, were allowed to go on their way unchecked. Professor Bowen of Harvard, always pungent and often tart, followed them up vigorously in the "North American," as did Professor Felton more mildly. Yet there was always something behind the cloud, an influence which revived these victims like some cloud-concealed goddess in Homer; and however severe the attacks may have been, they were usually the fruit of narrowness, not of mere malice. They were rarely mixed with merely personal bitterness, as were the contests of the same period, under Poe's influence, among New York men of letters; nor were they so much entangled with money-quarrels as those, since money was a thing with which New England students had little to do. No one among them, however, fared so miserably, in financial negotiations, as did poor Cornelius Mathews in New York, who, after his "Big

My wife is very happy to have  
it in her power to be useful, & while  
she is getting the tamarinds desires me  
to say how happy we are in the recovery  
of the babe from so alarming an attack  
she has not sent frequently to enquire,  
apprehending You would be troubled in  
that way, & preferring rather to inform  
herself from the Neighbors.

Yours very sincerely,

Edward Everett

Wednesday's





Abel and the Little Manhattan" had been announced as a forthcoming volume of a series, was offered by the repentant publishers \$100 to allow them to withdraw the offer and leave the book unpublished, but who refused the request. The "North American Review" — then a Boston periodical — settled the case of this unfortunate author tersely by saying, "Mr. Mathews has shown a marvelous skill in failing, each failure being more complete than the last." Horace Greeley hit his merely political opponents as hard as this, but the New York "Tribune," under Margaret Fuller's influence, kept clear of bitter personalities in literature, something which she had not always quite done in "The Dial."

It must be remembered that the Transcendentalists never, in the early days, called themselves by that name. Their most ambitious title was, as has been said, that of Disciples of the Newness. It must also be remembered that this Newness itself was in some degree a reversion to the old, as in Margaret Fuller's case it came from a learned father who brought her up in direct inheritance of whatever was ancient. She was, by her own statement, early "placed in a garden with a great pile of books before her." She began to read Latin before she read English. The Greek and Roman

deities were absolutely real to her, and she prayed, "O God, if thou art Jupiter;" or else to Bacchus for a bunch of grapes. When she was old enough to think about Christianity, she cried out for her dear old Greek and Roman gods. It was a long time, her friend Mrs. Dall tells us, "before she could see the deeper spirituality of the Christian tradition." Hence it is, perhaps, that we see rather less of sunshine in her than in the other Transcendentalists.

For the unbelieving world outside, it must be remembered, the Transcendental movement at least contributed some such sunshine through the very sarcasms it excited; as when Mrs. Russell, Father Taylor's brilliant daughter, did not flinch from defining the Transcendentalists as "a race who dove into the infinite, soared into the illimitable, and never paid cash;" or when Carlyle described Ripley, who had called on him in England, as "a Socinian minister, who had left the pulpit to reform the world by cultivating onions." Emerson compared Brook Farm to "a French Revolution in small," and a certain meeting of the Transcendental Club to "going to heaven in a swing." All the peculiarities of Brook Farm, we may be sure, were reported without diminution in the gossip of Boston society, even the jokes of the young people made upon themselves being



taken seriously in the world outside; as when they asked at the dinner-table, "Is the butter within the sphere of your influence?" or proposed that a pie should be cut "from the centre to the periphery." There being more young men than young women, at first, an unusual share of household duties, moreover, fell upon the stronger sex. They helped in the laundry, brought water from the pump, prepared vegetables in the barn. The graceful George William Curtis trimmed lamps, and the manly and eminently practical Charles Dana organized a band of "griddle-cake servitors," composed of "four of the most elegant youths of the community."

There was also a Brook Farm legend that one of the younger members or pupils confessed his passion while helping his sweetheart to wash dishes; and Emerson is the authority for stating that as the men danced in the evening, clothespins sometimes dropped from their pockets. Hawthorne wrote to his sister, not without sarcasm, "The whole fraternity eat together, and such a delectable way of life has never been seen on earth since the days of the early Christians. We get up at half-past six, dine at half-past twelve, and go to bed at nine." An element of moral protest also entered into the actual work of the more serious members.

Thus Mr. Ripley said to Theodore Parker of John Dwight, afterwards eminent as a musical critic, "There is your accomplished friend; he would hoe corn all Sunday if I would let him, but all Massachusetts could not make him do it on Monday." Rumor adds that Parker replied, "It is good to know that he wants to hoe corn any day in the week." The question is not how far these details were based on fact or were the fruit of fancy, but the immediate point is that they materially aided in keeping up the spirits of the unbelieving world outside.

It is possible that those seemingly vague and dreamy times might have communicated to those reared in them too passive and negative a character but for the perpetual tonic of the anti-slavery movement, which was constantly entangling itself with all merely socialistic discussion. At every crisis brought on by this last problem it turned out that mere moral purpose might impart to these pacific social reformers a placid courage which rose on occasion to daring. Thus it took years to appreciate the most typical of these men, Bronson Alcott. The quality that was at first rather exasperating in him became ultimately his greatest charm: the manner in which this idealist threw himself on the Universal Powers and left his life to be assigned by them. That life had

seemed at first as helpless and unpromising as the attitude of the little Italian child who, having stopped at a certain door near Boston and received breakfast for sweet charity's sake, was found sitting placidly on the doorstep two hours later, and being asked why she had not gone away replied serenely, "What for go away? Plenty time go away!" The wide universe was to Alcott a similarly vast and tranquil scene. He had, as was said of his English friend Greaves, "a copious peacefulness." It was easy enough to see this in a humorous light, but when in later years, after those who had broken down the Boston Court House door for the rescue of Anthony Burns had been driven out, and the open doorway was left bare, it was Alcott who walked unarmed up the empty steps, calmly asking, "Why are we not within?" and on finding himself unsupported, turned back slowly, then walked placidly down again, he and his familiar cane, without visible disturbance of mind. It has lately come to light, since the publication of the memoirs of Daniel Ricketson, that Alcott afterwards offered to be one of a party for the rescue of Captain John Brown. It was still the same Alcott, only that he watched the slowly forming lines of his horoscope, and found them, in Emerson's phrase, "come full circle." In a

similar way Thoreau, after all his seeming theories of self-absorption, ranged himself on the side of John Brown as placidly as if he were going for huckleberries.

Yet the effect of Transcendentalism on certain characters, a minority of its adherents, was seemingly disastrous; though the older we grow, the harder it is to be sure that we know all the keys to individual character. The freedom that belonged to the period, the sunny atmosphere of existence, doubtless made some men indolent, like children of the tropics. Some went abroad and lived in Europe, and were rarely heard from; others dwelt at home, and achieved nothing; while others, on the contrary, had the most laborious and exacting careers. Others led lives morally wasted, whether by the mere letting loose of a surge of passion ill restrained, or by that terrible impulse of curiosity which causes more than half the sins of each growing generation, and yet is so hard to distinguish from the heroic search after knowledge. I can think of men among those bred in that period, and seemingly under its full influence, who longed to know the worst of life and knew it, and paid dearly for their knowledge; and their kindred paid more dearly still. Others might be named who, without ever yielding, so far as I know

Covington April 2<sup>nd</sup> 1852

Dear Sir,

I do not see  
that I can refuse to read  
another lecture, but  
what makes me hesitate  
is the fear that I have  
not another available  
which will entertain  
a large audience, though  
I have thoughts to offer  
which I think will be  
quite as worthy of their  
attention. However I  
will try, for the prospect  
of earning a few dollars  
is alluring. As far as I  
can perceive, my subject  
would be <sup>rather transcendental, treated</sup> "Reality". It has  
still in "Walden or Life in  
the Woods". Since you  
are kind enough to  
undertake the arrange-



ments, I will leave  
it to you to name an  
evening of next week -  
decide on the most suitable  
room - and advertise it -  
if this is not taking  
you too literally at your  
word

If you still think it  
worth the while to  
attend to this, will  
you let me know as  
soon as may be what  
evening will be most  
convenient.

Yrs with thanks

Henry J. Thoreau

J. W. Higginson

or guess, to a single sensual or worldly sin, yet developed temperaments so absolutely wayward that it became necessary, in the judgment of all who knew the facts, for their wives and children to leave them and stay apart, so that these men died in old age without seeing the faces of their own grandchildren. Others vanished, and are to this day untraced; and yet all these were but a handful compared with that majority which remained true to early dreams, while the world called them erratic, and the church pronounced them unredeemed, or, in Shakespeare's phrase, "unhousel'd, disappointed, unaneled."

It must be remembered also that, in that period of general seething, all other reformatory movements alternated with efforts of the socialists and joined with them to keep up the spirits of the Community. The anti-slavery meetings, for instance, mingled sorrow with joy and sometimes even with levity. Nowhere in all the modern world could have been seen more strikingly grouped the various dramatis personæ of a great impending social change than on the platform of some large hall, filled with Abolitionists. There sat Garrison in the centre, his very attitude showing the serene immovableness of his mind, and around him usually two or three venerable Quaker Vice-

Presidents, always speechless, while in themselves constituting an inexorable though unwearied audience. Grouped among them were "devout women, not a few," as the Scripture has it, and fiery orators brought together from different fields of action, where they had been alternately starved, frozen, or mobbed, according to the various methods adopted by unbelieving rural scoffers. Mingled with these were a few city delegates, the most high-bred men and women in appearance to be found in Boston, such as Wendell Phillips, Edmund Quincy, and Mrs. Chapman. Among these, strangest of all, were the living texts for all the impending eloquence of the platform: the fugitive slaves, black or mulatto or sometimes indistinguishably white, perhaps just landed from their concealment on Southern packet ships, or in covert corners of freight cars. There might be Henry Box Brown, so named from the box in which he had been nailed up and been borne, occasionally on his head, from slavery to freedom; or Harriet Tubman, who, after making her own escape from the land of slavery, had made eight or ten covert visits thither, each time bringing back by the underground railroad her little band of fugitives; or William and Ellen Craft, she going from city to city northward as a young Southern gentleman,



wearing a tall hat and traveling-shawl after the manner of those days, and with spectacles to hide her still more, while her husband posed as her attendant slave. These, and such as these, passed across the stage in successive years. And no one who early saw Frederick Douglass just rescued from slavery could possibly have foreseen in him the princely and commanding aspect with which he was to tread in later years those same boards and prove himself, as the veteran reporter Yerrington used to say, one of the few speakers on the platform whose speeches needed absolutely no revision before printing.

These gave the tragic, the Shakespearean aspect of the anti-slavery movement, to be relieved by another side of the screen when Wendell Phillips and some other hero of the platform led beyond the door the shrieking Abby Folsom, with her unfailing cry, "It's the capitalists!" or Mellen was silenced by more subtle persuasions, and tempted away to continue his interminable harangue to some single auditor in the side scenes. Once take Garrison himself away from the convention, and no man better loved his placid joke. He could go to prison without flinching, but could not forego his pun, we may be sure, after he got there, and would no more have denied himself

that innocent relaxation in jail than a typical French nobleman in Revolutionary days would have laid aside his snuff-box in the presence of the guillotine. A similar cheerful and unwavering tone pervaded those leaders generally, and I remember when Mrs. Chapman established the first outdoor anti-slavery festival, on the avowed ground that there was no reason why the children of this world should enjoy themselves better than the Children of Light.

It is needless to say that the tropical race in whose interest all this anti-slavery work was carried on took their share of levity, when opportunity came, the instances of habitual gloom being usually found, not among those who had escaped from slavery, but rather in those born free, bred at the North, having some worldly prosperity, and yet feeling that a modified subjugation still socially rested upon them. The inexhaustible sense of humor in Frederick Douglass, on the other hand, kept him clear of this, as was never better seen than on the once famous occasion when the notorious Isaiah Rynders of New York, at the head of a mob, interrupted an anti-slavery meeting, came on the platform, seated himself, and bade the meeting proceed. Douglass was speaking, and, nothing loath, made his speech only



MATTHEW ARNOLD



keener and keener for the interference, weaving around the intruder's head a wreath of delicate sarcasm which carried the audience with it, while the duller wits of the burly despot could hardly follow him. Knowing only, in a general way, that he was being dissected, Rynders at last exclaimed, "What you Abolitionists want to do is to cut all our throats!" "Oh, no!" replied Douglass in his most dulcet tones. "We would only cut your hair;" and bending over the shaggy and frowzy head of the Bowery tyrant, he gave a suggestive motion as of scissors to his thumb and forefinger, with a professional politeness that instantly brought down the house, friend and foe, while Rynders quitted the platform in wrath, and the meeting dissolved itself amid general laughter. It was a more cheerful conclusion, perhaps, than that stormier one — not unknown in reformatory conventions — with which Shakespeare so often ends his scenes: "Exeunt fighting."

One of the most curious circumstances connected with the whole Transcendental period, and one tending, whether in seriousness or through satire, to bring out its sunny side, was its connection with Horace Greeley. He himself was a strange mixture of the dreamy and the practical, and his very appearance and costume, his walk and conversation, combined

these inconsistent attributes. The one great advertising medium possessed by the whole Brook Farm movement was the New York "Tribune," and it is a part of the quaintness of the whole affair that an enterprise which seemed physically so insignificant should have for its organ a journal then rapidly on its way to becoming the most widely circulated in the nation. Yet Greeley's own externals, when he first stood at the door at Brook Farm, might have suggested a visitor from any part of the land rather than New York city, and a delegate from any other sphere rather than that of metropolitan journalism. Miss Amelia Russell, a member of the Community, thus describes his appearance at first glance: "His hair was so light that it was almost white; he wore a white hat; his face was entirely colorless, even the eyes not adding much to save it from its ghostly hue. His coat was a very light drab, almost white, and his nether garments the same." No better samples could, perhaps, be given of the mirth-making aspects of that period than might be done by a series of extracts from Greeley's letters as published in the volume called "Passages from the Correspondence of Rufus W. Griswold," in which, you find Greeley alternately moving heaven and earth to get for the then unknown Thoreau the publication of his



Inkton, Ambleside.  
Aug. 6<sup>th</sup> 1843.

My dear Sir

It is only just settled  
that I can have leave from  
my Department, so as to be  
able to come to America;  
but some time ago I  
promised, if I did come, to  
stay with Mr Phillips & ~~Brooks~~  
at Boston. I therefore cannot  
accept your kind invitation,  
but I hope to have the  
pleasure of calling to thank  
you for it when I am in  
Boston.

Very truly yours,  
Matthew Dowd

Colonel Higginson





maiden essay on Carlyle in "Graham's Magazine," and himself giving \$75 to pay for it in advance; and about the same time writing to Griswold, "Gris. make up for me a brief collection of the best Epigrams in the Language — say three folio sheets of MSS.;" then cheerfully adding, "A page may be given to epitaphs, if you please, though I don't care!"

This suggests how much of the sunshine at that period came also to many from Thoreau himself, whose talk and letters, like his books, were full of delicate humor; and who gave to outdoor hours such an atmosphere of serene delight as made one feel that a wood thrush was always soliloquizing somewhere in the background. Walks with him were singularly unlike those taken with Alcott, for instance, who only strolled serenely to some hospitable fence at the entrance to some wood, and sat down there, oblivious whether frogs or wood thrushes filled the air, so long as they did not withdraw attention from his own discourses. As Alcott carried his indoor meditations out of doors, so Thoreau brought his outward observations indoors, and I remember well the delightful mornings when his favorite correspondent, Harry Blake, my neighbor in Worcester, Mass., used to send round to a few of us to come in and hear extracts from Thoreau's

last letter at the breakfast-table; these extracts being the very materials that were afterwards to make up his choicest volume, "Walden;" letters which combined with breakfast and with sunrise to fill the day for us auditors with inexhaustible delight.

That period is long passed, and these few stray memories can at best give but a few glimpses of its sunnier side. The fact that it did pass and that it can never be reproduced is the very thing that makes its memories worth recalling. The great flood-tide of the civil war bore this all away, followed by the stupendous growth of a changed nation. Every age has its own point of interest; and the longest personal life, if lived wholesomely, can offer but a succession of these. But one question still remains, and will perhaps always remain, unanswered. Considering the part originally done by the English Lake Poets in bringing about this period of sunshine in America, why is it that the leaders of English literature on its native soil for the last half century have had a mournful and clouded tone? From Carlyle and Ruskin through Froude and Arnold to Meredith, Hardy, Stevenson, and Henley, all have had a prevailing air of sadness, and sometimes even of frightful gloom. Even Tennyson, during at least a portion of his reactionary

May 20. '72.

Alton Towers,  
Cheshire.

Dear Colonel Higginson,

It is very vexatious that I should be in the country precisely when you would be in London "for a short stay only": I hope it will at least be long enough to allow me the visit of you next week, when I shall assuredly return. The letter of my old & valued friend Perkins

is valuable rather as giving me  
news of himself & his family than  
making me acquainted with a  
person so well known to me as

yourself. I shall write to you

the moment I return: and, how:

— with numerous good enlargements  
may be, I have hope that you will  
give me a few minutes' space

to full knowledge of you at the  
Club: I have too much out of  
the way to wish such a visit  
as, under other circumstances I  
might be tempted to ask.

Pray, believe me,

Dear Colonel Higginson,

With truly & cordially yours

Robert Browning.



later life, and Browning, toward the end of his, showed the same tendency. In America, on the other hand, during the same general period, the leading literary figures, with the solitary exception of Poe, — who was wont to be an exception to all rules, — were sunshiny and hopeful, not gloomy. This is certainly true of Emerson, Alcott, Thoreau, Longfellow, Lowell, Holmes, Whittier, Whitman. Even if Hawthorne may have seemed to the world an exception because of his reticence and sombre bearing, we must remember how he laid aside those traits within his own household. "Never was there such a playmate," said to me once his noble and stately daughter Una, describing her happy childhood. These and all the rest, save Poe, found joy, predominant joy, in life. Why this difference? It is not yet time, perhaps, to fathom the mystery and give a clear answer to the question.



## II

### THE CHILD AND HIS DREAMS

I AM accustomed to make great use of an invaluable little volume, the Brief Biographical Dictionary, and it contains one line that often arrests my attention, and has always an inexhaustible charm. The plan of the book is simply to give in alphabetical order the name of each noted person, with his occupation, his biographer, and the dates of birth and death; thus preserving in the smallest space, as in an urnful of white dust, the substance of each career. And among these condensed memorials — inserted between “Fleming, John, Scottish Naturalist,” and “Fleming, Patrick, Irish Roman Ecclesiastic” — occurs this line: —

“Fleming, Marjorie, *Pet.* (Life by J. Brown, M. D.) 1803-1811.”

That is all; but it is to me as touching as the epitaphs of children in the Greek “Anthology.” Those who have read in Dr. Brown’s “Spare Hours” his delicious sketch of the fascinating little creature thus commemorated, will not wonder that her life of eight years obtained for her

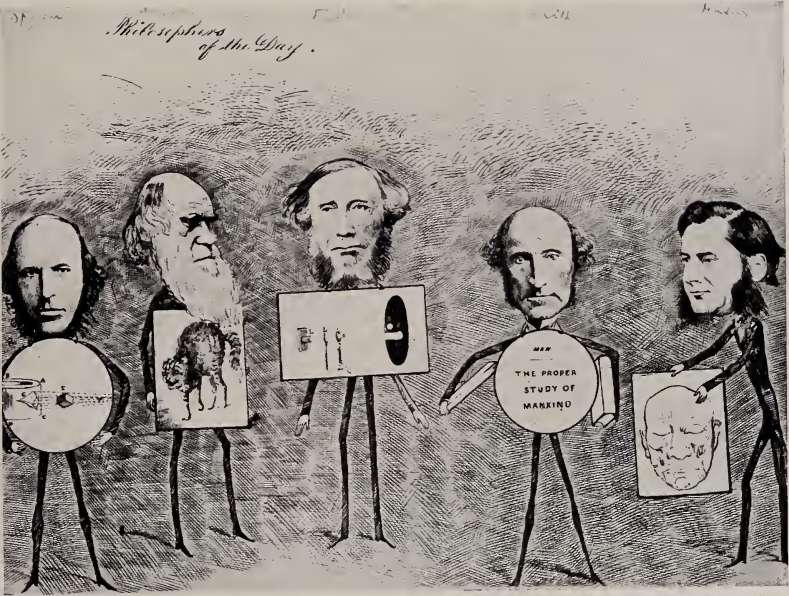


a niche in fame's temple as enduring as that of any of her maturer clansmen. Nay, what to us is a mere "Scottish Naturalist" or "Roman Ecclesiastic" beside "Pet Marjorie"?

I would fain take this adoption of this rare little maiden into the Biographical Dictionary as an indication that we are beginning a more careful and reverent study of childish ways. It is wrong to leave this mine of quaintness and originality to be the mere wonder of a day in the household, when even the savants are beginning to talk about "Psychological Embryology," thus vouchsafing us two polysyllables, beneath whose protecting shadow we may enter on pleasant themes. Why should we praise Agassiz for spending four hours a day at the microscope, watching the growth of a turtle's egg, and yet recklessly waste our opportunities for observing a far more wondrous growth? Or why should the scientific societies send agents to study the Chinook jargon, or the legends of the Flathead Indians, when the more delicious jargon of these more untamable little nomads remains unrecorded? Mr. G. P. Marsh has drawn important inferences as to language from the broken English of children; and there are themes of study, more absorbing still, in their broken and fantastic imaginations.

Care and duty hem us in so closely during

maturer years, that we should become dry and desolate but for constantly recurring to the one period of life when the limitations of space and time do not oppress us, and the far off is as the near. The baby who puts out his little hand for the moon is compelled to draw it back empty, yet he puts it forth many times again. My friend's little daughter, after having the stars pointed out to her for the first time, requested next day to have "two little stars with sugar on them for breakfast." And in their first dealings with human beings children set aside the petty barriers of generations and centuries in the same fine way. "Mamma," said in my hearing the little daughter of a certain poetess, "did I ever see Mr. Shakespeare?" It was at the dinner-table, and between two bites of an apple. On another occasion the same child said with equal confidence, "Mamma, did you ever know Cleopatra?" There was no affectation about it; she was accustomed to seeing literary people and other notabilities at her mother's house; and Shakespeare and Cleopatra might have come and gone, arm in arm, without exciting her half so much as the arrival of a new paper doll. Thus a child traveling with me, and seeing me salute, at a railway station, a certain Methodist minister of great dimensions, inquired, with casual



PHILOSOPHERS



interest, whether that was the Pope? To assign to the Pope his proper place in space, and to Shakespeare or his heroines their rightful position in time,—what have children to do with such trifles? Matters more important claim their attention; are there not hoops and skipping-ropes and luncheon?

And when the imagination of children thus sets out on its travels, it embraces with the same easy sweep the whole realm of mythology and fairyland, still without questioning or surprise. A young gentleman of my acquaintance, aged seven, who had already traveled in Greece with his father, and who was familiar by hearsay with the Homeric legends, formed lately a plan of vast compass for summer entertainment. He proposed to his father that they should erect a hotel on one of the Plymouth (Massachusetts) hills, and should engage all the Greek gods and goddesses as permanent attractions for the possible boarders. He suggested that these deities had been "turned out" so long that they would doubtless be glad to get places, and he could afford to pay them handsome salaries out of the profits. It was a part of the scheme that Agamemnon, Ulysses, and others, should also be engaged to "preach" at the hotel, giving in their discourses a narrative of the Trojan war. This course of lectures was to last



ten years, and was to be repeated in every decade; and finally Orpheus and the Nine Muses were to give a series of concerts for the benefit of the enterprise. This plan he devised for himself and quite independently of his father, but wished that gentleman to use his influence with the colleges toward securing the necessary spectators. This appeal was met by the generous pledge of a hundred tickets from Cambridge alone, whenever this "grand combination of attractions," as the programmes say, should be brought together.

In what land of blissful fancy do children dwell, when they build up such visions as this, — eager to talk about them, wounded if they are ridiculed, desolate if they are crushed, and yet never absolutely believing them to be wholly true? In maturer years we still yield ourselves with some readiness to fancy; we weep at the theatre; actors themselves weep. Charles Lamb's friend, Barbara S., remembered in old age how her neck had been scalded in childhood by the hot tears that fell from the eyes of Mrs. Porter, as Isabella. It does not even require the illusion of the visible stage in order to produce such emotions. When Richardson was writing "Clarissa Harlowe," he had letters by scores, imploring him to save his heroine from impending despair, or to bring back Love-

lace to virtue. "Pray, reform him; will you not save a soul, sir?" wrote one correspondent; and Colley Cibber vowed that he should lose his faith in a merciful Providence unless *Clarrissa* were protected. Nor were these the mere whims of a fantastic period, for who does not remember the general groan of dismay among the young women of America when Miss Alcott, in her second volume, forbade the banns between Jo and Laurie. Yet how far do even these instances fall short of the intensity of childhood's emotions!

I knew a little girl who was found sobbing in bed, one night, unable to close her eyes, long after her usual time of slumber. With much reluctance and after long cross-examination, she owned that her sorrow related solely to the woes of "Long Tail" and "Blue Eyes," two devoted rats, whose highly wrought adventures she had just been reading in a child's magazine. "Blue Eyes" had been caught in a trap, from which "Long Tail" had finally rescued her, but their sufferings had been so vividly described that it was long before she could be induced to view it as anything but a real tragedy. Less easy of persuasion was a child once under my charge, a boy of twelve, unusually strong and active, spending almost his whole time in the open air, who was yet moved by

the story of "Undine" to such exaggerated emotion that he lay awake the greater part of the night, in an agony of tears, which grew worse and worse, till I hit upon a happy thought, and imagined for him a wholly new ending to the tale, — bringing Undine out of the water and reuniting her to Hildebrand, so that all should live happily ever after. Being offered this entirely ideal refuge from an equally ideal woe, my poor little pupil dried up his tears and was asleep in five minutes.

We are apt to be amazed that children should thus lend themselves to be profoundly moved by what they do not, after all, accept as truth. But what know they of real or unreal? The bulk of the world's assumed knowledge — as that the earth revolves around the sun — is to them as remote from personal verification as their fairy stories, and seems more improbable. They have to take almost everything for granted, and the faculty of "make-believe" is really in constant exercise, whether in study or play. "Only the Encyclopædia to learn," said Lord Chatham, with doubtful encouragement, to his boy; but so long as it is all hearsay, how is any one to draw the line where the wonders of the Encyclopædia end and those of the Arabian Nights begin?

"I should think," said my little cousin to



me, as he hung enraptured over the Pilgrim's Progress, "that those Apollyons must be a bad kind of fellows to have about!" He would have taken the same view of rattlesnakes, never having actually seen either species of monster. Sir Philip Sidney says, when speaking of the old theatrical practice of labeling the stage-scenery, "What child is there, that, coming to a play, and seeing 'Thebes' written on an old door, doth believe that it is Thebes?" But all history, and art, and science are but so many stage-doors to the child, and they are all labeled Thebes, or something still more incomprehensible. Even Keats begins his classification of the universe with "things real, as sun, moon, and passages of Shakespeare." The truth is, that the child does not trouble himself to discriminate between the real and ideal worlds at all, but simply goes his way, accepts as valid whatever appeals to his imagination, and meanwhile lives out the day and makes sure of his dinner. Luckily, you can by no means put him off with any Barmecide delusion about that.

We do not sufficiently remember that the most humdrum daily life is essentially ideal to an imaginative child, or is, at least, easily idealized. One secret of the charm of "Charles Auchester" is that in the early chapters it describes the

enchantment produced by music on many a susceptible boy or girl, portraying emotions such as many have experienced, but none had ever before dared to describe. There is nothing in it which overstates what I can remember to have felt in childhood when lying awake in bed, after dark, and listening to my sister's piano. It may have been a nightly ten minutes, at most, but I perceive now, in looking back, that the music lulled all childish sorrows to sleep, and drew a curtain of enchantment over the experience of every day. And even without such melodious aid, children will take the echoes of the most prosaic events and weave them into song and legend for themselves. How vivid the picture of the lonely life of the Brontë household, with their nightly dramas, into which Bonaparte and the Duke of Wellington enter, and the wayfaring man at the door is caught up into the romance. But a thousand such childish experiences are unrecorded. We go to visit the families of our friends, and find that we have long served as *dramatis personæ* to their children. They have only heard of us, have never seen us; but they have long since painted us in their pictures, played us in their games, named dolls or boats for us, and taken us with them on imaginary voyages to the North Pole. They have

supplemented their own lives, in short, by including in fancy the experiences of every life with which they have come in contact.

It is a common thing for children to live in some world of their own, apart from all their daily duties and belongings. In one household of my acquaintance, two little girls possess a private fairyland named "Blab." All their play hours are passed in it; its secrets are known to them only: even their parents are not admitted; but their baby sister, not yet two years old, is by birthright a citizen of the realm, and acts with great dignity her part in its pageants. They have invented for this enchanted land a language, both spoken and written,—their father, it should be said, is an eminent linguist,—and they have devised novel combinations of letters, to express sounds not represented in the English tongue.

I knew another child who spent her summers on a charming estate by the seashore, with her grandfather for chief playmate. They jointly peopled with a fairy world the woods and rocks around them. Every rocky cave, every hollow tree, every hole in the ground, was full of enchantment. There were paths and ravines where it was forbidden to walk fast or speak aloud. The two playmates would steal off by themselves and hold secret converse

for hours concerning these wonders, till, on one unlucky day, the elder conspirator forgot himself so far as to speak disrespectfully of the prime minister of the Court of Fairyland. No actual peril could have taken more apparent hold of the child's imagination. She walked up and down, wringing her hands, and endeavoring to propitiate the supposed wrath of these beings unseen by such highly wrought appeals as this: —

“ I come to implore you in behalf of my beloved grandpapa! Spare him! O respectable Green Bird! Do his doom lightly!”

Another child of my acquaintance created for himself, before he could speak plainly, a realm less fairy-like but more fantastic, whose ideal hero was named “Mr. Dowdy.” The materials for his career were all drawn from the incidents of daily life in the streets of Boston, where the child dwelt; and nothing was seen from the windows that was not immediately glorified among the incidents of Mr. Dowdy's life. Going once to spend a night at the house, I found the elder members of the family quite excited about a public meeting which they had attended, and which had been broken up by a mob. I had petitioned, as usual, that the little boy might sleep with me, for his imagination, like that of most children, was

liveliest at first waking, and his prattle was, when taken in moderation, a great delight. I accordingly found his little head lying on my pillow at bedtime, and was aroused the next morning to listen with drowsy ears to Mr. Dowdy in full career. Nestling close to me, the young narrator proceeded. The excitement of the night previous had added to his vocabulary a new word; and accordingly "Mobs" appeared on the scene as a new figure, a sort of collective unit, antagonistic to all good,— a prince of the powers of evil,— a malign being, who made unseemly noises, broke benches in halls, and forced peaceful aunts to flee for their lives. To "Mobs" malignant enters the virtuous and triumphant Dowdy, and the scene thus proceeds:—

"Then Mobs come up'tairs again, make a noise, frighten the people, frighten Aunty. Then Mr. Dowdy come; he set his dog on Mobs; eat him all up; drive him away."

Then rising in bed, with an air of final decision and resistless fate,—

"It says in Queen Victoria's book, that outrageous Mobs must be put down'tairs!"

So heartily had I gone along with the flow of narrative that I hardly felt disposed to question the infallible oracle thus cited, and "The Koran or the Sword" seemed hardly a



more irresistible appeal than Queen Victoria's book. I had not the slightest conception what it meant; but on inquiry at breakfast, I was shown one of those unpleasant medical almanacs, such as are thrown in at unoffending front doors. This, it seemed, had been seized upon by one of the elder boys, and one of its portraits had been pronounced to look just like the pictures of Prince Albert. It had afterward passed to my little friend, who had christened it, for the alleged resemblance, "Queen Victoria's book," and had hung it on the wall, to be henceforth cited solemnly as containing the statutes of the imaginary realm where the Dowdies dwelt.

More commonly, I suppose, this ideal being is incarnated in a doll. I knew a little girl who spent a winter with two maiden ladies, and who had been presented by one of them with a paper doll, gorgeously arrayed. She named it the Marquis, and at once assigned to that nobleman the heart and hand of her younger hostess. He was thenceforth always treated with the respect due to the head of the house; a chair and plate were assigned him at table, though, for reasons of practical convenience, he usually sat in the plate. "Good-morning" must always be said to him. The best of everything must be first offered to him, or else Liz-

zie was much hurt, and the family were charged with discourteous neglect. Indeed, she always chose to take the tone that he did not receive quite the consideration to which his rank and services entitled him; and when she first awoke in the morning, she would give reproofing lectures to his supposed spouse. "He does everything for you," the child would say to this lady: "he earns money, and buys you all that you have; he shovels your paths for you," — this being perhaps on a snowy morning when that process was audible, — "and yet you do not remember all his kindness." The whole assumed relationship was treated as an absolute reality, and the lively farce lasted, with undiminished spirit, during the whole of a New England winter.

It is matter for endless pondering. What place does this sort of thing really occupy in a child's mind? It is not actually taken for truth; the child will sometimes stop in full career and say, "But this is all make-believe, you know," and then fling itself again into the imaginary drama, as ardently as ever. These little people know the distinction between truth and falsehood, after all, and the great Turenne, when a boy, challenged a grown-up officer for saying that Quintus Curtius was only a romance. These fancies are not real;



they are simply something that is closer than reality. This makes the charm of that inexhaustibly fascinating book, "Alice in the Looking-Glass," a book which charms every child, and which I have nevertheless heard quoted by the President of the London Philological Society in his annual address, and to the reading of a chapter of which I have seen Mr. Darwin listen with boyish glee by his own fireside. No other book comes so near to the very atmosphere of the dawning mind, that citizen of an inverted world, where the visions are half genuine, and the realities half visions. After Alice in the story has once stepped into the looking-glass, passing through it to the world where everything is reversed, she is at once amazed by everything and by nothing. It does not seem in the least strange to be talking with the queen of the white chessmen, or to have her remember the things that are not to happen till week after next. Alice in the pictures never loses the sweet bewildered expression we know so well, and yet she is "always very much interested in questions of eating and drinking," and is as human and charming as Pet Marjorie. Who shall disentangle the pretty complication? The real and unreal overlap and interpenetrate each other in a child's mind, film upon film, till they can be detached only by

a touch as subtle as that of Swinburne, when he essays to separate the successive degrees of remoteness in the portrait of a girl looking at her own face in a mirror, — a poem on the picture of a likeness, the shadow of the shadow of a shade.

“ Art thou the ghost, my sister, —

White sister there ?

Am I the ghost, — who knows ?

My hand, a fallen rose,

Lies snow-white on white snows, and takes no care.”

Nor does it require any peculiarly gifted temperament to bring forth these phenomena of childhood. Given the dawning mind as agent, and the wonderful universe as material, and all else follows of itself. Some of the most remarkable stories I have ever known were told of children whose maturer years revealed nothing extraordinary, just as I heard the other day of a girl who could hum the second to a musical air before she could speak, and who, on growing up, proved to have hardly any ear for music. There never was a child so matter-of-fact, perhaps, but his mind, on coming in contact with the outer world, encountered experiences as hazy as the most dreamy poet could depict. In older people we can discriminate between different temperaments, but childhood is in itself a temperament, or does the

work of one; and it is brought face to face with a universe of realities so vast and bewildering that you may add all the realm of the impossible and hardly make the puzzle more profound.

In Hans Andersen's story, the old hen assures her chickens that the world is very much larger than is commonly supposed, — that indeed it stretches to the other side of the parson's orchard, for she has looked through a hole in the fence and has seen. But to the child, the whole realm of knowledge is the parson's orchard, and all experience is only a glimpse through some new hole in the fence. What deceives us elders is that the child placidly keeps on his way through this world of delusion, full of his school and his play, and accepting everything as easily as we accept the impossibilities of our dreams. He is no more concerned with your philosophical analysis of his mental processes than were the pigeons reared by Darwin with the inferences he drew from their plumage and their shapes. Holding in himself, could we but understand him, the key to all mysteries, the urchin does not so much as suspect that there is a key to be sought. If he bestows one thought upon the problem of his existence, he dismisses it easily with the assumption that grown-up people understand

it all. But his indifference lulls the grown-up people also, and even as we watch him his childhood passes, and his fancies "fade into the light of common day."

Thus much for the forms which a child's fancy wears. They might be further illustrated by endless examples, but let us now consider the influence exerted by this faculty upon the other powers. It is certain, to begin with, that the imagination is, next to love, the most purifying influence of a child's life. In proportion as the little creature absorbs itself in an ideal world, it has a mental preoccupation "driving far off each thing of sin and guilt." Indolence or selfish reverie may come in, doubtless, but not coarseness. In a strongly imaginative childish nature, even if evil seems to enter, it leaves little trace behind, and the soul insensibly clears itself once more. The foundations of virtue are laid in the imagination, before conscience and reason have gained strength. This is according to Plato's theory of the true education, as given in the second book of "The Laws." "I mean by education," he says, "that training which is given by suitable habits to the first instincts of virtue in children; when pleasure and friendship, and pain and hatred [of vice] are rightly implanted in souls not yet capable of understanding the nature of them,

and who find them, when they have attained reason, to be in harmony with her. This harmony of the soul, when perfected, is virtue."

I do not, by any means, assert that the ideal temperament tends to keep a child from all faults, — only from the grosser faults. His active imagination may sometimes make him appear cowardly, for instance, through the vividness with which he conjures up dangers that do not touch the nerves of the stolid or prosaic. On the other hand, the same faculty may make him brave, when excited by a great purpose, excluding all immediate fears. So this activity of the imagination may make him appear cruel, when it takes the form of an intense desire to solve the mystery of life and death, and to assert the wondrous fact of human control over them; an impulse beginning when the boy kills his first bird, and not always satiating itself in the most experienced hunter. But the same imaginative power may also make him humane, if it be led to dwell on the sufferings of the animal, the bereaved nest, the dying young. "God gives him wings and I shoot him down," says Bettine Brentano. "Ah, no; that chimes not in tune." I suppose we are all at times more sentimental than we consent to acknowledge, and at other times more hard-hearted; and it is for education so to direct our imagi-



native power that it shall help us in the contest between right and wrong.

Nevertheless, parents, as must be owned, often regard the imagination as a faculty to be dreaded for their children. People are like Mr. Peter Magnus in "Pickwick," who disliked anything original, and did not see the necessity for it. They assume that this faculty is a misleading gift, tending to untruth, — making a boy assert that a hundred cats are fighting in the garden, when there are only his own and another. Yet even this extreme statement is not to be ranked among deliberate falsehoods, — it is only an intense expression, what the Greeks called a plural of reverence. For the boy two cats are as good or as bad as a hundred, if they only scratch and sputter enough, which, indeed, they are apt to do. He cannot report the battle as greater than his imagination sees it. Objectively there may be but two cats; subjectively there are a thousand. Indeed, each single animal expands before his eyes like that dog in Leech's "Brown, Jones, and Robinson," which is first depicted as it seemed to those travelers, vast, warlike, terrific, and afterward as it would have seemed to the unimaginative observer, only a poor little barking cur. To give the full value of the incident, both pictures are needful, and it is only when the power of

expression matures that we learn to put both into one, securing vividness without sacrificing truth. Professor Jared Sparks, the most painstaking of historians, used to tell us in college that no man could write history well without enough of imaginative power to make it graphic.

The fables of children and of childlike nations, even where they give tongues to animals and trees, have an element of truth which causes them now to be collected for the purposes of science. While the philosopher looks for the signs of human emotion in the facial expression of animals, children boldly go farther, and attribute words as well as signs. "I was never so be-rhymed," says Shakespeare's Rosalind, "since Pythagoras' time, that I was an Irish rat, which I can hardly remember." But children, as Heine says, still recall the time when they were animals and trees; and the theory of transmigration always has great fascination for them. Even the conception of their own preëxistence sometimes gets into their heads. A meditative little fellow, the son of a friend of mine, waked one morning with the mystical remark on his lips, "Mamma, we have all been here more than once, and I was only the last one that was sent." In the thought of God and of the future life, too,



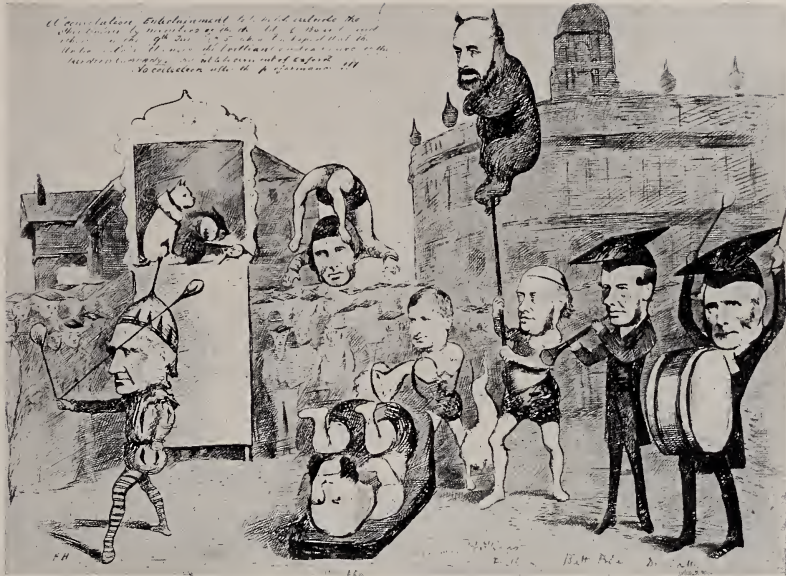
their imaginations have play, sometimes leading to the most familiar and amusing utterances, and then to words that help older minds to trust a higher guidance, and to keep an outlook into spheres unseen. The easy faith of children strengthens our own, and reminds us that the very word "juvenile" comes from the Latin *juvo*, which means "I help."

Every autumn I collect in my room the young seed-vessels of the common milkweed, which may be found by every roadside. They presently open, and all winter long the graceful tufts of sheeny silk are slowly detaching themselves with constant, tireless, noiseless motion; each mounting into the currents of warm air and silently floating away. You cannot keep these little voyagers down; you cannot guide them as they soar; they are presently found clinging in unexpected places, and are set free at a touch, to float off again; they occupy the room with a delicate aerial life of their own. Just such winged things are the fancies of childhood, giving to the vital seed of thought its range; bearing it lightly over impurities and obstructions, till it falls into some fitting soil at last, there to recreate itself and bear fruit a hundred-fold.

### III

## ENGLISH AND AMERICAN COUSINS

I HEARD on board ship, a few years ago, a discussion as to the comparative number of Americans visiting England and of Englishmen visiting America. None rated the proportion of the former class as less than ten to one; but the most experienced traveler among us laughed at this low estimate, and declared that five hundred to one would be much nearer. Be the difference less or more, it shows the utterly unequal ground on which the two national bodies meet, as to mutual acquaintance. Traveling on the Continent of Europe, soon after, with a party of young Americans, I was witness of their dismay at being assailed from time to time by friendly English fellow travelers with such questions as these: "Is it not very lonely in America? Are there any singing birds there? Any wild flowers? Any bishops? Are there booths in the streets of New York? Do people read English books there? Have they heard of Ruskin; and how?" These were from



A CONSOLATION ENTERTAINMENT

A "consolation" Entertainment to be held outside the Sheldonian by members of the Hebdomadal Board and others on the 9th June, 1875, when it is hoped that the "Undergrad's" will enjoy the brilliant endeavours of the TALENTED COMPANY. (N. B. Not to be seen out of Oxford.) No collection after the performance!!!



the rank and file of questioners, while a very cultivated clergyman lost caste somewhat with our young people by asking confidently, "Are Harvard and Yale both in Boston?" a question which seemed to them as hopelessly benighted as the remark of a lady, just returned from the wonders of the New World, who had been impressed, like all visitors, with the novelties offered in the way of food at Baltimore dinner-tables, but who still sighed with regret at having been obliged to come away without eating what she called "a canvas-backed clam."

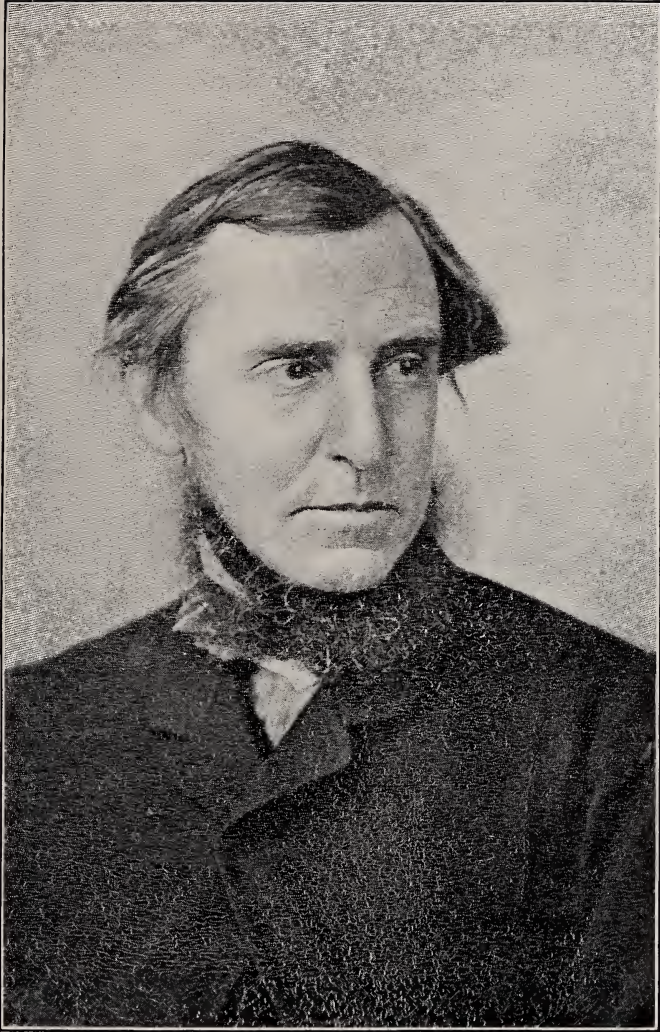
One needs to know but little of large families of collateral kindred to recognize that the nearer the cousinship, the closer the criticism. Theodore Hook profanely declares the phrase "a friend that sticketh closer than a brother" to designate a cousin, and Lord Bacon comes near enough to the same thought to point out that we are bidden by the highest authority to forgive our enemies, but are nowhere bidden to forgive our friends. It may be wise, therefore, for Americans to draw their compliments, not from their own newspapers, but from the verdicts of such English critics as Lord Lyons, who, as recorded in the delightful "Letters of a Diplomat's Wife," declared, on his return from a long residence in Washington, that he "had never yet met a stupid American woman,"

or Mr. Froude, who, during his voyage around the world, records, "Let me say that nowhere in America have I met with vulgarity in its proper sense." These two compliments are undoubtedly so sweeping that perhaps no American citizen would think it quite safe to apply them to the people who live in the adjoining street; but they are at least worth a thousand vague newspaper libels. Even Matthew Arnold, who certainly cannot be said to have loved America much, or to have known much about it,—for what can a man be said to know about America who describes a Virginia mob as fortifying its courage with fishballs and ice water?<sup>1</sup>—was led, while making a comparison with those whom he had left at home, to say, "Our [English] countrymen, with a thousand good qualities, are really, perhaps, a good deal wanting in lucidity and flexibility."

In the same way, Americans might borrow their criticisms on England from those writing in that country. Thus, Mr. H. G. Wells, a novelist and scientist in one, but not himself a university man, writes in the "Fortnightly Review" of "the ordinary Oxford, Cambridge, or London B. A.:" "He has a useless smattering of Greek; he cannot read Latin with any comfort, much less write or speak that tongue;

<sup>1</sup> *The Nineteenth Century*, May, 1887, p. 317.





JAMES ANTHONY FROUDE





he knows a few unedifying facts round and about the classical literature; he cannot speak or read French with any comfort; he has an imperfect knowledge of the English language, insufficient to write it clearly, and none of German; he has a queer, old-fashioned, and quite useless knowledge of certain rudimentary sections of mathematics, and an odd little bite out of history. He knows practically nothing of the world of thought embodied in English literature, and absolutely nothing of contemporary thought; he is totally ignorant of modern political or social science. If he knows anything of evolutionary science and heredity, it is probably matter picked up in a casual way from the magazines, and art is a sealed book to him."

And lest it be said that Mr. Wells, with all his knowledge and brilliancy, is not himself a graduate of any English university, it is fair to cite the opinion of Mr. Rudolph C. Lehmann (Trinity College, Cambridge, M. A.), who, after spending much time in America, where he was familiar with our university life, makes the following remark as to English and American schoolboys. He writes:—

"There can be no comparison between the two. The English public schoolboy is one of the most profoundly ignorant creatures on the face of the earth. Of geography he knows only

as much as he may have gathered by collecting postage stamps. With English literature he is not even on terms of distant politeness. The style and composition of his letters would make a housemaid smile, and modern history, whether of his own country or of the world in general, is a sealed book to him."

No criticism from Americans is more common than that as to the greater slowness of the English mind as compared with the American; and Professor Tyndall, when lecturing in this country, was amused to find, as he told me, that whereas in making experiments before a London audience he had to repeat his explanation three times, — once to make his hearers comprehend what he was about to do, then to show what he was doing, and then to explain what he had done, — he could after his first lecture in America omit the final explanation, and latterly the middle one as well. He also told a story to the same effect about an English manager of a "minstrel" troupe, traveling in America, who was accustomed to prolong his jokes by the aid of two end men, each bringing out a part of the joke, but who found with indignation that every American audience "caught on" without waiting for the second end man. Yet the careful American observer soon finds that the standard of quickness is to

be determined in England, as everywhere else, by the point of view. People who go slowly on new ground may turn out to be quick enough when wholly at home with any particular line of thought.

How odious and complicated, for instance, seems to an American observer the computation of pounds, shillings, and pence! It seems strange that any nation should consent for a day to employ anything but a decimal currency; yet with what lightning rapidity does a London bookkeeper make his computations! Again, what a life of tedious formality seems that of an English house servant; yet there was no slowness of intellect in that footman, in an earl's family, who, when his young lord fell over the banister, and his younger brother called to ask if the elder boy was hurt, answered promptly, "Killed, my lord!" thus promoting the second son to the peerage while the elder was falling over the banister. Even in the House of Commons, the unlikeness to an American deliberative body is found to vary according to the point from which you look at the discussion. The Englishman begins with a curious air of hesitation, whereas the American glides into his speech at once; but the difference is that the Englishman suddenly surprises you by coming to his point with clearness and deci-

sion, after which he amazes you yet more by sitting down; whereas the American, after his first good hit, is apt to seem intoxicated by his own success, and feels bound to keep on indefinitely, waiting for another. You are left under the impression that an ideal speech in any debating body would be achieved by having an American to begin it and an Englishman to end it.

Such plain facts as these show the injustice of attributing to our cousins any deliberate unfairness to ourselves, and any conscious spirit of boastfulness. We have only to read the newspapers to see that party spirit rises, on the whole, higher in England than here; and certainly it is impossible for our cousins to criticise us with more formidable frankness than that which they apply to one another. No man who ever lived was more universally claimed as a typical Englishman than Walter Savage Landor, and yet he wrote to Lady Blessington, "I would not live in London the six winter months for £1000 a week. No, not even with the privilege of hanging a Tory on every lamp arm to the right, and a Whig on every one to the left, the whole extent of Piccadilly."

It must be remembered that the progress of events is in one respect, at least, distinctly drawing the two nations into closer connection.

The advance of colonization undoubtedly tends to democratize England, while the same development has the opposite effect in America. Froude, in his travels, found the British colonists, here and there, thinking that Tennyson must have lost his wits to accept a peerage; and it is well remembered that at least one of those who came to the Queen's Jubilee to represent different regions of the globe refused a proffered knighthood on the ground that his constituents would not endure it. Anglo-Indian life, to be sure, shows no such results, the conditions there being wholly different; but I speak of the self-governing colonies like Canada and Australia; and no one can have stayed any time under the same roof with such colonists in England, or paced the quarter-deck with them on board ship, without feeling them to be nearer to Americans than to Englishmen in their general mental attitude.

Perhaps the best single key to the lingering difference between English and American temperaments is to be found in that precept brought to the front in almost any text-book of morals or manners one can open in England, bidding each man to "be faithful to that station of life to which he is called." To the American, upon whom has always been imposed the duty of creating for himself his own station, this maxim



seems to explain all the unsatisfactory results which seem to follow from the English method. Is the calling equally providential and even sacred, no matter from whom the voice proceeds? The first glance at the history of the English peerage shows us six peerages created to ennoble the offspring of Charles II, who left no legitimate child. Seven more were created by William IV for his illegitimate sons; and his two illegitimate daughters were the wives of peers. All these families are entitled to use the royal liveries. Next to this lineage of degradation come the peerages and other grades of rank founded primarily on wealth,—a process naturally beginning with the lower grades. Hume tells us that James I created the order of Baronets in 1611 by selling two hundred of those titles for a thousand pounds each. Mr. Pitt went so far as to say that all men whose income was rated at more than twelve thousand pounds should be in the House of Lords. How systematically this method has been carried on to this day may be seen in the following passage from the "Spectator" of May 23, 1896:—

"The Birthday Honors published on May 20 hardly call for comment. Lord Salisbury does not distribute them eccentrically, but according to the regular custom, taking wealthy



Salisbury  
Hornham  
~~Sturminster Newton~~  
October 9.

Dear Mr. Higginson

I am much pleased to hear  
from you. The Atlantic Monthly which  
you have sent me has not ~~been~~<sup>been</sup> forwarded  
with your letter, but I shall find it next  
week when I return to London. I am  
glad that you have written about  
Carlyle. You will not misunderstand  
me when I say that I am not sorry myself  
that the work of unmeaning adulation  
which hung over his death was checked  
by the Reminiscences for which I am  
responsible. That work is an exact  
picture of him, and when taken upon  
seriously to think what he was, and what  
he did.

for the world they will feel for ever grateful  
that they have a genuine picture of him as  
authentic as it is beautiful. Nothing  
could have disappointed him more than  
a general agreement of England and America  
that he had been a great man and that  
he must have a statue like White the  
Gerron whom he taught and repudiated  
as forgotten. A little before his death  
he said to me "the world says now that  
I am too short, and proper to admire  
me, but they do nothing and I have told  
them, and they do not when what I say  
a statue will be raised to Carlyle by ob-  
-trayary statues; but it will be when people  
are in a more state of mind and have  
I wish that he saw deeper into his spirit's

and most condoning the modern world.  
than to take any one of the false prophecies.  
whom they take as their practical guides

He was an extraordinary man. Extra-  
ordinary in his intellect & peculiar in his  
Character. . . I should be false to him  
and false to my duty if I were to think  
him as a painted idol, for the world  
to look in their temples ~~and~~ like  
their Christs & Virgins. While the keeping  
the commandments they think as little  
of, with one as the other

Evening I often think of as one of  
the best with remembering of the many  
excellent acquaintance that I made in  
America. I regret that it should be  
"remembering" only. . . I heard that you  
had been again in London since the time

you speak of. Perhaps it is a mistake  
I should be sorry to think that you had been  
within reach of that I should not have  
seen you.

I have a hope. (I do not know indeed  
whether I can properly call it a hope -  
perhaps a dream rather) of crossing the  
Atlantic again to look at you etc  
I have come reluctantly to recognize that  
the future of the Anglo-Saxon race is with  
you and not with us. - he cannot  
accumulate an empire, and without  
him we can now be nothing but a  
considerable commercial state in an Imperial  
Power, an end is coming (unavoidably) near.

But see I take no prophesy. . . Am sure  
thank you for writing to me  
and when we  
fasterly meet  
I A. B. C.

squires like Mr. E. Heneage and Colonel Malcolm of Poltalloch for his peerages; and giving baronetcies to Mr. R. U. P. Fitzgerald, Mr. W. O. Dalgleish, Mr. Lewis McIver, Mr. J. Verdin, and Mr. C. Cave, because they are wealthy men who have done service to the party."

If it be said that this process does not vary essentially from the method by which social rank is created in America, the reply is plain enough. Grant that the two forms of aristocracy have much in common, both in their sense of power, and in that comforting fact which Lady Eastlake so finely pointed out, that both of them often "return to the simplest tastes; they have everything that man can make, and therefore they turn to what only God can make." Nevertheless, there is this further difference, that, as Mr. Howells has so well shown, though the rich man may look down as distinctly as the lord can, the poor man does not equally look up. Note, too, that in the next place, the prestige of the rich American vanishes with his wealth, and in case he dies poor, his children inherit nothing; whereas inherited rank in England goes by blood only, and is not impaired by the fact that the rank may pass afterwards into the hands of a bankrupt or a scoundrel. The same limitation applies to the

riches of the brain, which may also refuse to be hereditary. One can hardly cast so much as a glance at the United States Senate in session, and then at the English House of Lords in session, without recognizing the American elective body to have a far more intellectual aspect than the other assemblage; or without further observing that nine tenths of the visible intellect in the British House is to be seen in the faces and foreheads of the Bench of Bishops, or the so-called Law Lords, whose origin may have been of the humblest. "Why noble Earls should be so ugly," wrote one English observer of some note in his day, "is a problem in nature;" but the question is not that of mere beauty or ugliness; it is of visible mental power.

Even so far as a possible heredity goes, it must be recognized that a republican life is what makes grandparents most truly interesting. Free from the technical whims of an organized peerage,—such, for instance, as primogeniture,—one is left free to trace for good or for evil his inheritance from the various lines of ancestry. Those lines may be drawn with especial interest from public service or social prominence; from pursuits, or education, or even wealth. Whittier's Quaker inheritance was as important to him as Longfellow's par-



1  
"Cap Knoll

2<sup>nd</sup> Mo 23 1888

Dear Friend Heggstad.

I have just  
read with a pleasure  
I cannot help ex-  
pressing thy beautiful  
poem "The Deafening Howl"  
in the Coast Advocate.  
Nothing better of its  
kind has ever appeared  
in that Magazine,  
and I heartily con-  
gratulate thee upon  
it. Thy old friend  
John D. Sullivan





entage of judges and landed proprietors was to him. I knew an American radical, who, on going to England, paid some one at the *Heralds' College* to look up his ancestry. Coming back to London some months later, he found that the inquirer had gone back no farther, as yet, than to reach one of his name who was hanged as a rebel under the Tudors. "Just as I expected," said the American in delight; "do not follow it any further. I am perfectly satisfied."

Fifty years ago, so far as mere traveling was concerned, the distinctions of rank in the mother country did not intrude themselves on the American cousin. It was the frequent habit of traveling Americans, visiting England for the first time, to assume that their hosts would be ungracious, and that they themselves must necessarily wear a hedgehog suit. As a matter of fact, however, even then, the American traveler usually laid aside his prickles on the second day, finding that there was no use for them in those small railway carriages. Traveling Englishmen of all conditions, at least on their own soil, proved quite as ready to offer a railway guide, or a bit of advice, as in this country. It is to be remembered, moreover, that the whole system of traveling habits in England — railways, hotels, and all — has

greatly expanded and liberalized within that time. No doubt much of the former American injustice was due to the example of Englishmen of the last generation in doing injustice to one another. Horace Walpole said that he should love his country very much if it were not for his countrymen. "I hate Englishmen," said Keats, "for they are the only men I know." Heinrich Heine, that Parisian German, said that he was firmly convinced that a blaspheming Frenchman was regarded with more favor by the Almighty than a praying Englishman, and one might find examples, even among Englishmen themselves, of self-reproaches almost equally piquant.

On the other hand, the sense of truthfulness, of national rectitude, of a certain solid quality, comes over you like a whiff of English air in the very tone of voice of the first railway porter you meet. I recall vividly, as a type of this trait, a certain little English sergeant, with hair as fiery as his uniform, whom I met in an Irish post-office in 1870. I had landed at Cork the day before, on my first transatlantic trip, soon after the Civil War; and having been lately familiar with our own troops, I felt a great desire to see those of the mother country. Having readily obtained information from him as to the barracks near

by, we carried the conversation a little further. My new acquaintance seemed pleased at hearing that I had taken an actual part in the Civil War, and rather disappointed to find that I had been on what he evidently regarded as the wrong side. He told me in return that, although now a sergeant of the Guards, he had previously served in another regiment. Leaving him presently, I went to purchase some stamps at the office, where I was somewhat delayed by other applicants, and also by a natural inexperience in handling British money. During this time I observed that my friend of the brilliant coloring was lingering and keeping his eye on me, as if waiting for some further interview; and as I went toward the door he approached me, and begged my pardon for saying something more. "I told you, sir," he said, "that I was a sergeant of the Guards, which is true. But I wish to explain that I was not originally a member of that regiment, but was transferred to it after the battle of the Alma, where I was severely wounded. I give you my word of honor, sir, that I am the very shortest man in the corps!" I could only think of the phrase attributed to the Duke of Wellington, "The Guard dies, but never surrenders!"

The name of the Guards suggests to me a striking instance where an English friend and

distant kinsman of mine, then in command of the Grenadier Guards, found himself under the need of testing very suddenly the essential manhood of a body of Englishmen on the very verge of what seemed for the moment an insurrection. It was on that well-remembered night when the London mob tore down the fences of Hyde Park, to be used either as bonfires or as barricades, as the case might be. On that perilous evening, this officer was dining at a friend's house, all unconscious of impending danger, when he received a summons from the War Department, telling him that his regiment was ordered out to deal with a mob. Hurrying back to his own house, and calling for his man servant to saddle his horse, he found that the man had gone by permission for the evening, and had the key of the stable in his pocket; so that the officer, after hastily donning his uniform, must proceed on foot to the Guards' Armory, which lay on the other side of Hyde Park. Walking hastily in that direction, he came out unexpectedly at the very headquarters of the mob, where they were piling up the fences. Already his uniform had been recognized, and angry shouts began to rise. It must have seemed for the moment to the mob that the Lord had delivered their worst enemy into their hands.

There was but one thing to be done. Making his way straight toward the centre of action, he called to a man mounted on the pile, the apparent leader of the tumult, "I say, my good fellow, my regiment has been called out by Her Majesty's orders. Will you give me a hand over this pile?" The man hesitated for an instant, and then said with decision, "Boys, the gentleman is right! He is doing his duty, and we have no quarrel with him. Lend a hand, and help him over." This was promptly done, with entire respect, and the officer, in his brilliant uniform, went hastily on his way amid three cheers from the mob, which then returned to its work, to be completed before he whom they had aided should come back at the head of his regiment, and, if needful, order them to be shot down.

Surely the most travel-worn American, one would think, when recalling such scenes, can never revisit London without being reminded of the noble description of that great capital in Milton's "Areopagitica," written in 1644: "Behold now this vast city, a city of refuge, the mansion house of liberty, encompassed and surrounded with his protection; the shop of war hath not there more anvils and hammers working, to fashion out the plates and instruments of armed justice in defence of beleaguered



truth, than there be pens and heads there sitting by their studious lamps, musing, searching, revolving new notions and ideas wherewith to present, as with their homage and fealty, the approaching reformation; others as fast reading, trying all things, assenting to the force of reason and convincement. . . . Under these fantastic terrors of sect and schism, we wrong the earnest and jealous thirst after knowledge and understanding which God hath stirred up in this city."

When it comes to the use of their common language, the English and American cousins have no doubt those variations which habitually mark kindred families, even in adjacent houses; and, as between those families, there are always arguments on both sides, and many dictionaries and even lexicons need to be turned over before coming to a decision. In the same way, when a New England farmer says, "I don't know nothin' about it," we are apt to forget that this double negative was a matter of course in the Anglo-Saxon (see Hicke's Thesaurus), as it still is in the French; and it may be found abundantly in Chaucer and in Shakespeare, as in "Romeo and Juliet" (act iii, scene v), —

"a sudden day of joy,

That thou expect'st not nor I look'd not for."

In the same way, when our country people say

“learn me,” instead of “teach me,” they have behind them the authority of the English Bible, “learn me true understanding,” and also of Chaucer, Spenser, and Shakespeare, the latter, curiously enough, sometimes employing both words in the same sentence, as in “The Tempest” (act i, scene ii), where Caliban says, —

“You taught me language ; . . .  
. . . The red plague rid you  
For learning me your language !”

The French *apprendre* combines the meaning of the two words in the same way.

All the cousins must admit that such phrases are everywhere better preserved in rustic communities than elsewhere. Even in America, we get nearer the Chaucerian and Shakespearean dialect in the country than in the city. Old people are also necessarily nearer to it than the young, whatever the language. Thus M. Pasquier, who died in France in 1615 at the age of eighty-seven, remembered that in his youth the French word *konnête* had still an *s* in it, as in the English “honest,” and complained that he lived to see the *s* dropped and a circumflex accent substituted. It is to be noted, also, that in a new country all changes, when once introduced, make their way much faster than in an older one. We still see English critics laying the whole responsibility for

the dropping of the *u* in "honor," "favor," and the like, on Webster's Dictionary, whereas it really originated in England long before the publication of that work. It is stated in "The Gentleman's Magazine" for 1803 (No. lxxiii, part i, p. 146) that there was at that time in the library of St. John's College, Cambridge, a copy of Middleton's "Life of Cicero" printed with the omission of the *u* in such words, — a volume in which some pious student had taken the pains to reinsert them all. It would, at that time, have been thought an equal outrage to drop the closing *k* from physick, musick, publick, and the like; the only difference being that the *u* has thus far held its own, and the *k* has not. The English language simply changes faster in America than in England; and in this respect, as in some others, we are more like the French in our qualities. Vaugelas, an old French translator of Quintus Curtius, after devoting thirty years to the work, had to correct the language and spelling of the earlier part to make it conform to that of the latter pages; so that the critic Voiture applied to his case the Latin epigram of Martial on a barber, who did his work so slowly that the hair began to grow again upon one half the face while he was shaving the other.

When we pass from the comparative dialects

of the English and American cousins to their respective intonations, we find that, as Mr. William Archer has admirably pointed out in the "Pall Mall Magazine," there are so many whims and inconsistencies to be counted up in each family that it is hardly worth while to strike the balance. In colloquial utterance it is a curious fact that the nation which uses the more even and uninflected tone is the more impetuous and impulsive of the two, namely, the American; while the Englishman, slower and more staid, has yet a far more varied intonation. The most patriotic American, after a stay of some months in England, is struck by a certain flatness and monotony in the prevailing utterance of his fellow countrymen, on the quarter-deck of the returning steamer. Here, as in most things, there is a middle ground, and the two families are much less distinguishable in this respect than formerly. The American nasality is also toned down, and it is more and more common for two English-speaking strangers to meet and try in vain to guess the national origin of each other. When it comes to the actual pronunciation, it is a curious fact to notice, that special variations of speech in the English lower class have ceased to be accidental and unconscious, if they ever were so, but are more deliberate and, so to speak, premeditated,

than those of the corresponding class — so far as there is such a class — in America. I heard with interest, for the first time, in a third-class railway carriage in London an evidently conscientious and careful mother impressing on her child as a duty that extraordinary transformation of the letter *a* into *i* or *y*, of which the best manual is to be found in Mr. Whiteing's admirable tale, "No. 5 John Street." His neighbors on that street usually transformed "paper" into "piper," "lady" into "lidy," and "always" into "alwize." But in the case I describe, when a sudden shower came up, the little boy called attention to it, in what would seem to us a familiar enough dialect: "Mother, it's rainin'!" "You should n't say rainin'," said the anxious mother; "you should say rynnin'!" It brought home to me a similar attempt, on the part of an Irish-American orator, to correct Senator Lodge's habitual and very proper pronunciation of the place of his summer residence, Nahant. "Mr. Lodge of Nahant," said the orator, with a contemptuous prolongation of the last two vowels. He then paused for a sympathetic response from a Cambridge audience, but receiving none, he repeated, "Mr. Lodge of Nahant; that's the way he calls it. Common people call it Năhănt."

The conclusive statement as to the future



relation of English and American cousins may perhaps be found in that quiet sentence in which Emerson's volume called "English Traits" sums up (in 1856) its whole contents: "It is noticeable that England is beginning to interest us a little less." Toward this tends the whole discussion of that in which the mother country differs from her still formidable rival, France, on the one side, and from her gigantic child, the American Republic, on the other. As against both of these, England still clings to the toy of royalty and all which it implies. Against countries where aspiring intellect finds nothing too high for it to aim at, there still remains in England the absolute precedence of the House of Lords. I knew a young American girl, who, going to England under the care of an ambassador's family, and attending her first large dinner party, selected, upon looking about her, as the most interesting guest in the room, one man of distinguished aspect, whom she resolved to watch. When the guests were ushered into the dining-hall according to the laws of precedence, she found herself at the very end of the brilliant procession, as one of two untitled plebeians, in company with the very man who had interested her, and who proved to be Samuel Rogers, the poet and patron of art, and the recognized head of lit-



erary society in London. She always said that she secured two things at that entertainment, namely, the most delightful companion that she ever had at a dinner party, and, moreover, a lesson in the outcome of mere hereditary rank that would last a lifetime. Rogers's poems are not now read so much as formerly, but at that time the highest attention a literary American visitor could receive in London was to dine with him. He was also one of the richest bankers in that city, and was very possibly the only person in the room who had won for himself a reputation outside of his own little island; but he was next to nobody in that company, and the little American girl was the nobody.

Max O'Rell points out that the Frenchman who takes no notice of a duke will turn to take a second look at a great literary man or savant. No doubt the English aristocracy, as is always the case with aristocracies, often goes out of its way to do honor to literature and art in the form of courtesy or patronage; but this, too, has its limits. It is easy enough for a literary man in England to dine with a lord who shares his own tastes; it is only when he is asked to dine with a stupid lord that the attention can be counted as a social recognition. Even in this case it may be in the hope of finding the unwonted guest amusing; and it was said that

the immediate cause of the artist Haydon's suicide was his despair at being hopelessly eclipsed in polite society by Tom Thumb. If this is true, what fatal instances of self-destruction may not have taken place among American artists and authors who found themselves equally outshone in the English fashionable life by Buffalo Bill!

But let us turn from these trifles and go deeper. No American could possibly have passed through England during the anxious days of President McKinley's final ordeal and death, without being profoundly impressed with the inalienable tie between the two nations whose cousinship never before was so strikingly visible. I happened to be at Exeter, a city as marked, perhaps, as any in England for all that is non-American in church and state. All through that fatal Sunday the telegrams conveying the latest returns were put out, from time to time, at the windows of the office, and all day long one might see groups or single observers coming, going, and pausing to inspect; even children eagerly transmitting the successive items of news from one to another. There was no religious service held in the city, from the most conservative to the most liberal, where there was not some reference made to the incident. In all of these

there was reported — and as to several I can personally testify — a fullness of feeling such as touched the heart of every American. On the next morning, whole pages of the country newspapers, usually so barren of American items, were crowded with reports of Sunday services in various towns and villages. Driving through the country, in any direction, during those sorrowful days, one saw mourning flags here and there, on the streets, on public buildings, and before private houses. In London the very omnibus drivers sometimes carried them. We were constantly told that no European sovereign's death had ever brought forth so much testimonial of grief, and we could well believe it. No American who happened to be in England during that experience can ever again doubt the depth and reality of English and American cousinship.

## IV

### AMERICAN AUDIENCES

THERE was a time, nearly fifty years ago, when an American popular lecturer might say with truth, in the words of Emerson, "Europe stretches to the Alleghanies." One needed then to go beyond that barrier to find the first distinguishing footprints of young America, these being seen in the shaping influence produced on the growing West by the New York "Tribune," the "Atlantic Monthly," and the popular lecture system, otherwise called the Lyceum. The two former influences, however modified, are not yet extinct in the nation, we may claim; but the popular lecture system in anything like its original shape has vanished, even as a theme for discussion. Let us for a little while recall it, and for that purpose try to bring back some almost forgotten features of the young American community to which it came.

It is impossible for any but the very oldest to recall the astounding social effects produced upon all occupations and the whole way of

living in America by the introduction of railways. I possess a copy of the notes of "The Rangers' Trip to Westboro or Lion Quickstep," a march composed for the Boston Rifle Rangers, in 1834, when they took part in the first excursion made upon the Boston and Worcester Railway, just then opened to Westboro, thirty-two miles away. On this sheet of music is represented the train which bore that illustrious military company upon a pioneer excursion. The little train is drawn up beside the track in a series of box-cars much resembling cupboards in their narrowness and side-long arrangement. They are best described in one of the quaint notebooks of Samuel Breck of Philadelphia, then residing in Boston: "This morning at nine o'clock I took passage in a railroad car [from Boston] for Providence. Five or six other cars were attached to the loco, and uglier boxes I do not wish to travel in. They were huge carriages made to stow away some thirty human beings, who sit cheek by jowl as best they can. Two poor fellows, who were not much in the habit of making their toilet, squeezed me into a corner, while the hot sun drew from their garments a villainous compound of smells made up of salt fish, tar, and molasses. By and by, just twelve — only twelve — bouncing factory girls were



introduced, who were going on a party of pleasure to Newport. 'Make room for the ladies!' bawled out the superintendent. 'Come, gentlemen, jump up on the top: plenty of room there.' 'I'm afraid of the bridge knocking my brains out,' said a passenger. Some made one excuse and some another. For my part, I flatly told him that since I had belonged to the corps of Silver Grays I had lost my gallantry, and did not intend to move. The whole twelve were, however, introduced, and soon made themselves at home, sucking lemons and eating green apples."<sup>1</sup>

It is worth while dwelling a little further upon Mr. Breck's criticisms, so illustrative of the period. He thus goes into the social philosophy of this matter, and expounds it as if to imply that he is guided by something more than a whim: "Undoubtedly, a line of post-horses and post-chaises would long ago have been established along our great roads had not steam monopolized everything. Steam, so useful in many respects, interferes with the comfort of traveling, destroys every salutary distinction in society, and overturns by its whirligig power the once rational, gentlemanly, and safe mode of getting along on a journey. Talk of ladies on board a steamboat or in a

<sup>1</sup> *Recollections of Samuel Breck*, p. 275.



railroad car! There are none. I never feel like a gentleman there, and I cannot perceive a semblance of gentility in any one who makes part of the traveling mob. . . . To restore herself to caste, let a lady move in select company at five miles an hour, and take her meals in comfort at a good inn, where she may dine decently. . . . After all, the old-fashioned way of five or six miles an hour, with one's own horses and carriage, with liberty to dine decently in a decent inn and be master of one's movements, with the delight of seeing the country and getting along rationally, is the mode to which I cling, and which will be adopted again by the generations of after times."<sup>1</sup>

It was for a primitive community like this, just beginning to expand, that there grew up in New England, in New York, and at length as far as the Mississippi, an organization under the name of the Lyceum. There was, perhaps, some special local charity to be established in a settlement, or a church to be built, or a school to be endowed, so that a ready impulse was created among the so-called leading citizens, with devout women not a few, to organize a course of lectures. Some of these were usually furnished by the prominent men of the vicinity,

<sup>1</sup> *Recollections of Samuel Breck*, pp. 276, 277.

the clergyman, the lawyer, possibly even the member of Congress. The lecture became the monthly or weekly excitement of the place, and people drove long distances to reach it. Originating almost always with the New England element in the population, there grew up larger lecture societies, and these were soon, with the American love of organization, bound together more or less extensively. "The Association of Western Literary Societies," for instance, formed in 1867 or earlier, extended its range from Pittsburg in Pennsylvania to Lawrence in Kansas. In the winter of 1867-68, the agent of this association, Mr. G. L. Torbert of Dubuque, Iowa, negotiated between thirty-five lecturers and a hundred and ten societies, furnishing for each society a course of lectures, longer or shorter, and for each orator a tolerably continuous series of engagements.

Each man carried his letter of instructions in his pocket, and went forth with confidence to seek his dozen or his fifty towns, although in many cases their very names might have been previously unknown to him. He might reach the people solely on the indorsement of the agent, or he might be one whose very name was a magnet to bring people fifty miles. From the moment he entered the hall, or even the town, he was under strict surveillance.

He was to be tested by an audience altogether hospitable, but merciless in its criticism. In an eastern city, where lectures were abundant and varied, he would have for listeners those who knew him; but in the western community he reached all. Men and women wholly different from him in social position, creed, political party, even moral convictions, came to hear him just the same; and the hackman who brought him from the little inn hitched his horses at the door and came in to criticise the lecture. It was in one sense more of an ordeal to face the audience of a country town than that of a city, from the very fact that the speaker had the whole town to hear him, to pass a verdict upon voice, dress, and opinions. In a majority of cases, the speaker spent in the sleeping-car the night intervening between two lectures, and as he sat for a while over the fire in the smoking-compartment before turning in, he was very likely unrecognized, and called upon to discuss the features of his own lecture or take a hand in the funeral of his own reputation. Emerson wrote in his diary, "I never go to any church like a railroad car for teaching me my deficiencies."

The immediate author of the whole system of teaching American audiences by courses of Lyceum lectures was doubtless Horace Mann,

---

who became secretary of the Board of Education of Massachusetts in 1837. Mann held this post for eleven years, during which, as he testifies, he did not allow himself a day for relaxation, or an evening for a friend's society, but traveled constantly about the state, impressing on every town the need of popular education. It was not long before other highly educated men, among whom Emerson and Sumner were leaders, adopted the same path. Emerson, it is recorded, lectured twenty successive years in Salem, Massachusetts; and the present writer, being called upon to manage for the first time a course of Lyceum lectures in Newburyport, Massachusetts, in 1847, found himself expected to include Emerson every year and pay him twenty dollars a lecture, while no other speaker received more than fifteen. Of course the lecture system soon spread rapidly westward, though never southward. At first there were no professional lecturers, but each course had a few stars from a distance, and was mainly carried on by the professional men of the neighborhood, even as Thackeray's Barnes Newcome addressed his English constituents on "The Poetry of the Domestic Affections." In America, poetry and even science held the field only for a time; and public questions of all sorts took their places, until

there were signs of danger lest these departments of wisdom should exclude all others, and the popular lecture should represent only what had hitherto been designated irreverently as the stump. Above all, the desire prevailed to see every performer in his war paint, as it were, and take his measure. For this reason even the women lecturers, who soon took the field, found the elegances of costume a convenient aid; and Anna Dickinson, for a long time the most popular of this class, swept the rough floors of many a barnlike lecture-room with expensive silks, excusing herself on the simple plea that audiences liked to see them.

Financially, the lecture system was at its highest in America soon after the Civil War, when all prices were high; and a hundred dollars were paid for a lecture more readily than fifty dollars earlier or later. It was thought a bold thing in Henry Ward Beecher when he raised his price to two hundred dollars, but Gough and Anna Dickinson soon followed his example. Gough's income from this source extended far beyond the ordinary Lyceum season, including indeed the whole year round, and was popularly estimated at thirty thousand dollars a year. When I was first planning to raise a regiment during the Civil War, I went to him to urge him to become chaplain of it,





HENRY WARD BEECHER





justly holding that he would exert over the soldiers a great moral power. But he convinced me that he was already committed to send a long list of young men to college, and must look to his next year's lectures to give him the money for that.

There were at first very few women on the lecture platform, and they were only very slowly borrowed from the anti-slavery and temperance reforms, where they took an earlier place. This fact was more definitely emphasized for a time in the year when a "World's Temperance Convention," having been called in New York and taken up with much and varied energy, was split from the very outset by the refusal of the more conservative to allow women on the platform, this resulting in two distinct organizations: the World's Temperance Convention and the Whole World's Temperance Convention, at which latter the present writer presided. In a similar way, there were divisions among the male lecturers, resulting not merely from opinions, but from occupations; the lawyers and the clergymen furnishing most of the lecturers at the outset, although these orators steadily tended to become a class by themselves. There were from the beginning grades of popularity, roughly marked by the prices paid the lecturers. Gough,

Beecher, and Chapin stood easily at the head: then followed Charles Sumner, George William Curtis, Ralph Waldo Emerson, Theodore Parker, Wendell Phillips, Bayard Taylor, Dr. O. W. Holmes, Edwin P. Whipple, and Frederick Douglass. Great lawyers, as Daniel Webster and Rufus Choate, took their share of the service, when permitted by their professional engagements. Temporary political prominence easily brought forward a lecturer; as, for instance, John P. Hale, whose prominence as an anti-slavery leader in the national Senate led to his appearing before a great Boston audience on an occasion where I remember to have sat next to Emerson, who, like most of the audience, had never seen Hale before, and studied his appearance with interest. His final verdict as expressed to me was this: "See what an average-looking man he is. Looks just like five hundred other men. That must be where his power lies." This remark was soon verified from a different standpoint by the ablest lawyer of that day, Benjamin R. Curtis, who went up to New Hampshire to argue a law case in which Hale was his opponent. He was perfectly astonished, it appears, by the outcome. "I had with me all the evidence and all the argument, but that confounded fellow, Hale, got so intimate with the jury that I could do nothing with them." These

Senate Chamber

12<sup>th</sup> Dec. '63

My dear Sir,

I have always been  
of the opinion, that,  
in point of law,  
the colored troops,  
whenever as "volunteers,"  
are entitled to the  
same pay as the  
whites, & I have  
so advised at the  
War Department.

If the blunder is not  
corrected there, Con-  
gress must do it.

I am proud of the  
Colored troops. From  
the beginning I have had  
faith in them & I  
rejoice that my  
anticipations have been  
so nobly fulfilled.

The Gov. cannot

make any discrimi-  
nations against such  
mentally superior,  
who are helpful in  
in our need.

I have just recd.  
yr letter with regard  
to H. P., which I  
shall attend to with  
pleasure.

Congress is tran-  
quil - beyond all  
precedent. Ever before



since I have been here  
have the signs of  
a quiet storm been  
so positive. The  
battle of "ideas" was  
fought in the Con-  
gress. It remains our  
only task to assure the  
victory, & this we  
shall do

Ever sincerely yours,  
Charles Schubb

men, and such as these, were the lecturers of that day, and some of them, no doubt, were led to judge of their auditors very much as Curtis condemned his jurymen.

In respect to audiences, there was inevitably some difference between the older and newer communities. Western emigration took away from the leading towns, as it still continues to take away, many of the brighter minds and more energetic natures. It also removed more of the light weights, and therefore had a mingled result. In the choice of lecturers and the preference of themes a more intellectual quality was perhaps visible in the audiences left at the East. In some of the older towns, especially, the lecturer found himself confronted with what seemed a solid body of somewhat reculant and distrustful hearers, and went home discouraged, only to be assured in the next morning's local newspaper that his hearers had been greatly pleased. As compared to these, a western audience would almost always be more demonstrative as to approval or disapproval, or more prone to exhibit vacant seats upon the benches as the lecture went on. A story was told of the elder Richard H. Dana, the poet, that, becoming gradually more disturbed by such repeated interruptions, he once calmly paused and said with dignity to his

hearers that as he feared he was not successful in interesting them, he would pause for five minutes and give those who wished to withdraw the opportunity of doing so. He sat down, closed his eyes, and when he opened them again more than three quarters of his audience had vanished.

I remember well to have again discovered this same difference, in the early days of Radcliffe College, when I had been invited to read Browning to a number of the pupils at some private rooms; although in that case the difference was indicated more agreeably. I had chosen for reading "The Flight of the Duchess," as covering a greater range of variety between gay and serious than any other poem of the same length. I saw before me on the front seat a number of maidens having a grave and thoughtful appearance, and in the back part of the room a group of young girls of whose attention I did not feel quite so sure. As the reading proceeded, the former sat without moving a muscle; they seemed thoroughly attentive, but it was impossible for me to tell whether the reading met with their approval, and indeed whether the poem itself did. This was disappointing, and I found myself addressing my words more and more to the distant group, who listened with equal faithfulness,

---

but seemed to smile or sigh with the poet himself, so that I could have asked no pleasanter audience. When I mingled with my auditors, after the reading was over, I found that those from whom my discouragement had come were all faithful students of Browning, and had, by their own statement, enjoyed the reading. Their questions and criticisms were of the most satisfactory and even suggestive kind; while the girls in the rear, who came forward with the greatest cordiality to meet me, had been hitherto absolutely unacquainted with Browning, and were going home to read him. Nothing indicates better than this the shade of difference which may still be found lingering between eastern and western audiences. It must be remembered, however, that the greater ease of intercommunication tends constantly to equalize these, like all other variations.

It is a curious bit of tradition, kept over from a time when all public addresses were sermons, that audiences in the days of the Lyceum were decidedly more tolerant as to length, in listening to a lecture, than would now be the case. This was true, for instance, with Theodore Parker's lecture on the Anglo-Saxons, which was a favorite with audiences, although it was two hours long and made up of solid fact with almost no anecdotes or illus-

trations. Another remarkable triumph was also achieved in my hearing by an orator whose style of speaking was marked by force rather than grace; this being true in the case of Charles Sumner. He had been invited to Worcester, when I lived there, to give his argument in favor of accepting the new constitution framed for the State by the Constitutional Convention in 1853, of which he had been a member. The address began at eight, but I was delayed by other engagements, and did not arrive there until quarter past ten, when Sumner was evidently drawing a prolonged paragraph to a close. I regarded the audience rather with pity, because Worcester was then a place of quiet habits and early hours. He was finishing his sentence, however, in his somewhat stately and ponderous way, saying, "I have now refuted, as I think, the twelfth argument brought against a new constitution. I pass to a thirteenth objection;" this last offer being followed by a round of applause. It is fair to say that, in spite of this cordial response, the new constitution was defeated by an overwhelming majority which included, I believe, the city of Worcester.

Every lecturer had, through such tests, the inestimable advantage of learning day by day something of his own strong points, and yet



---

more of his weak ones. He might go to his rest soothed by a sense of success or harrowed by the thought of some fatal blunder. It was, of course, possible for him to receive only well-based or well-worded compliments. It was, alas, more possible, nay probable, that the speaker might be haunted for twenty-four hours, waking or sleeping, by the ghost of some error, called forth from an exhausted mind. These misfortunes happen to everybody, and their only compensation is the slight comfort of observing that there still remain audiences which can stand a great deal in the way of blunder; at least till they have had some hours for reflection on it. I remember quoting once, in a rural anti-slavery convention, a passage from Wendell Phillips, comparing slavery and war; and after enumerating the daily tragedies of slavery, I closed with his fine cadence, "Where is the battlefield that is not white, white as an angel's wing, compared with the blackness of that darkness which has brooded over the Carolinas for centuries!" I presently discovered, by the chuckling of some young women in the back seats, that I had substituted, in my enthusiasm, a raven's wing for an angel's, — "white as a raven's wing," I had said, — and I could only stumble on the hasty excuse of "the tendency of slavery to confuse black and white"



in order to withdraw myself from the difficulty, if that was to be called withdrawing. Even in the midst of my mishap, however, I could take some satisfaction in watching the comparative degrees of slowness with which the rather rustic audience detected my mistake, and the gradual smile which broke over the faces of partially deaf uncles, in the extreme background, to whom the error was being slowly explained by patient but smiling nieces.

These are the blunders which were sometimes visited only too severely in those earlier days upon the often exhausted traveling orator. On the other hand, the Lyceum gave to the literary man, especially, not only a different form of reaching the public, but a readier test of his own powers. He must face the people, eye to eye, as absolutely and irresistibly as does a statue in the public square. This test was a severe one for the over-sensitive or those ill furnished with voice or presence. Horace Greeley got the better of a large western audience which had assembled to meet him for the first time, by an opening sentence which told its own story. "I suppose it to be a fact universally admitted," he said, "that I am the worst public speaker in America." The very defects of his manner justly implied that he must have something worth hearing in spite of them, and

so his hearers listened. But if every speaker had his rebuffs, he might also, if he watched carefully, see his own progress. It is one of the pleasures of public speaking that there is sometimes drawn from the speaker some happy phrase or sentence of argument or illustration such as he has vainly sought by the fireside or in the study, so that he has found himself saying to another what he could not possibly have said first to himself.

Personally, I was for three years an officer of a lecture association in Worcester, Massachusetts, whose net annual profits for that time averaged twelve hundred dollars, after paying to each lecturer an average price of a hundred dollars. It is pleasant to know that the proceeds of this course became the foundation of the excellent natural history collection of that city. It is also pleasant for me to remember that my connection with it brought the only interview I ever had with Thackeray, who was invited to be one of the speakers in this course, and who declined the invitation on the ground that some other course had offered him a larger sum. I remember how pleased his kindly face looked when, after he had stammered out an awkward refusal on this ground, I assured him that no apology was needed in America for accepting a higher compensation instead of a

lower one. The suggestion seemed to relieve his mind to a rather amusing extent, though I had supposed it to be one of those obvious doctrines which the light of nature sufficiently teaches. It was more easily learned by another lecturer, of much note in his day, who was offered, within my knowledge, twelve thousand dollars a year on the assurance that he would give his time solely to editing a certain New York weekly paper, or else five thousand with the privilege of lecturing as much as he pleased. By his own statement he unhesitatingly chose the latter.

Most valuable of all the experiences gained by the American lecturer was, perhaps, his increased knowledge of his own nation, and his appreciation of its vastness. I remember my delight when a woman at whose house I once stayed in Nebraska, on being complimented upon her selection of an abode, replied with some discontent that she did not like living in the western country so well as living in Illinois, as if Illinois had not then seemed to me nearly as far off as Nebraska; and I recall with delight an occasion on a night train over the Michigan Central Railway when the conductor had just called "London," and a wondering little girl sprang from the seat in front of me, saying to her mamma, "Oh, mamma, do we really

pass through London, that great city?" Pleasant sometimes, though sometimes fatiguing, were the casual intimacies with strangers of all degrees: as when a young schoolgirl once opened a long traveling conversation with me in Iowa, which she justified by an apology when we parted, saying that she thought I looked like one who might like to read Ruskin.

It was refreshing, too, when a young child traveling eastward from the far West held a conversation close beside me with a very pallid and worn-out mother, which perhaps deserves narrating more fully. I never saw a woman more utterly exhausted, while the child seemed as fresh at sunset as at dawn. It was when the through trains on the Boston and Albany still stopped at West Newton, and the conductor had just called with vigorous confidence the name of that station. After a pause, the child exclaimed as vigorously "Mother," to which the mother responded, perhaps for the two hundredth time that day, in a feeble voice, "What, dear?" when the following conversation ensued: "What did that man say, mother?" "He said West Newton." A pause for reflection, then again "Mother." "What?" "What did that man say West Newton for, mother?" To this the mother, with an evasiveness dictated by despair, could only murmur "I don't

know." This was plainly too well-tryed an evasion, and the unflinching answer came, "Don't you know what he said West Newton for, mother?" She, being thus pursued, fell back on the vague answer, "Said it for the fun of it, I guess." By this time all the occupants of the car were listening breathlessly to the cross-examination. Then came the inevitable "Mother," and the more and more hopeless "What?" "Did that man say West Newton for the fun of it, mother?" "Yes," said the poor sufferer, with an ever increasing audience listening to her vain evasion. The child paused an atom longer; and then continued, still inexhaustible, but as if she had forced her victim into the very last corner, as she certainly had, "What *was* the fun of it, mother?" Upon this, the whole audience involuntarily applauded, and did not quite cease its applause until the train finally stopped in Boston. It is possible that more than one lecturer returning home from a long trip, and hearing these successive inquiries, may have asked of himself a similar question. Yet there was unquestionably fun in a western lecture tour, after all.



## V

### THE ARISTOCRACY OF THE DOLLAR

**I**T is much to be doubted whether any marriage contract in history had ever a simpler or compacter basis than that between the celebrated Dr. Samuel Johnson and the lady who became his wife. It stands recorded, not in Boswell's Life of him, but in the scarcely less entertaining letters of his contemporary, Miss Anna Seward. He told the object of his affections that he was, in the first place, of mean extraction; that, in the second place, he had no money; and that, in the third place, he had had an uncle hanged. Not to be outdone, the lady replied as promptly that she valued no man the more or the less for his parentage; that as to money, she had none herself; and that, in regard to his last point, although she had never had a near relative literally and actually hanged, she had at least twenty who deserved to be. It is needless to say that a marriage between two such congenial spirits followed, and that it was, all things



considered, fairly happy. It is worth noticing, also, that the two lovers sketched out unconsciously the successive phases of social structure which have prevailed in the world. Society must always have some kind of aristocracy or leadership, some standard of social precedence. The aristocracy of birth is one form of this standard; that of wealth is another; while that of wisdom, of virtue, and of never having had a relative hanged is still another. Let us for the present confine ourselves to the first two of these alternatives.

We are living in a transition period of our social history. The aristocracy of birth is passing away. The aristocracy of wealth is coming forward. This in its turn may yield to something better. There is certainly room for it! But standing as we do beside the death-bed of one form of social organization and the cradle of another, it is worth while to compare their merits. There are those who honestly believe that in losing hereditary aristocracy the world is losing much, and who see a formidable danger in the aristocracy of wealth. Others maintain, as sincerely, that this movement is a step forward and not backward. It is a good time to set the two side by side and see how far the world is likely to lose or gain by the exchange.

In all Europe, of the hereditary governing bodies which once ruled it, there is left to-day but one, the English House of Lords. In one or two other countries, such as Austria and Prussia, the upper chamber contains the hereditary element, but it is never exclusive, while the English House of Lords stands by itself. It is, indeed, in one respect more aristocratic than in the Middle Ages, because in those days it consisted quite largely of an appointive body, the dignitaries of the church, who had commonly risen from the ranks of the people, and whose position was not hereditary. This life element, comprising the bishops, has now been reduced, as Goldwin Smith once said, "to comparative insignificance in point of numbers, and to almost total insignificance in point of influence." This impairing of power further extends to the whole body of the House of Lords from the very dignity of its traditions, and from the recent origin of most of its peerages. Not only do very few of these date back as far as the landing of the Pilgrims in America, but the very membership of the House, and consequently its voting power, depends at any moment on the action of the King. When the Reform Bill was carried, June 7, 1832, by the express promise of the King to create new peers enough, if needful, to carry it through

the Lords, the Lords became from that moment, for practical action, a wholly secondary body; a system of brakes — not of wheels — for the car of state. It is becoming filled, accordingly, as Mr. Bodley tells us in his "France," with "newly made peers, who prevail upon the editors of peerages to erase from their pedigrees the worthy aldermen who founded their fortunes, and accord them forefathers who performed feats at Hastings unknown to the workers of the Bayeux tapestry" (ii, 375). We see the outcome in the criticisms of "Vanity Fair" on London society: "In Rome and Vienna, and even in republican Paris, London society has become a laughing-stock. Blood, pride of race, what are these? Where are they nowadays? Money, above all the willingness to entertain, these are the pass-keys to what was once a fortress to be entered by birth, and by birth alone."

For the aristocracy of birth, the English basis was the law of primogeniture, which Dr. Johnson maintained to be a good law, because it made only one fool in each family. Yet we forget how few years it is since, in some of our older American colonies, the traditions of Old England were still upheld, in this respect, and hereditary forces ruled the state. I remember talking once with a Rhode Islander, now an

aged man, who recalled the time when he had returned from India, after a five years' absence, and who had then voted when but one day in port, because he was the oldest son of his father.

Nothing, indeed, now remains in America which so recalls the feudal system as the whole region of the Narragansett country in Rhode Island, where one still sees the remains of a class of buildings differing in kind from any now erected. They represent great square houses of fifty or a hundred and fifty feet front, with drawing-rooms twenty feet square and from fourteen to sixteen feet high. There were two stories, with high gambrel attics for the slaves, who often occupied outbuildings, also. The houses were so large that in one of them, the old Potter house, there occurred a house-warming of three days and nights, during which the old father and mother, in their out-of-the-way rooms, never learned that anything was going on. Under the law of primogeniture, then prevailing, the households were on such a scale that one of these magnates, Robert Hazard, is said to have boasted of economy, when he brought his family down to seventy persons. He owned twelve thousand acres, kept foxhounds, four thousand sheep, one hundred and fifty cows, and fourteen saddle-horses. He

employed twelve negro dairymaids, each with a small girl to wait upon her, by whose joint labors from twelve to twenty-four cheeses were made every day in the year for family consumption; and, let us hope, people took exercise enough to digest the product. These are, at any rate, the still living traditions of the Narragansett country as they prevailed thirty years ago.

In a similar way an almost feudal system of proprietorship was tried on the Hudson, and went down in the "anti-rent war." In the catalogues of our early colleges, the names of students were not arranged alphabetically, as now, but according to the relative social position of students' families, this lasting until 1767 at Yale, and until 1772 at Harvard. The Society of the Cincinnati was undoubtedly relied upon by many as a step toward hereditary aristocracy. But what came of it? You hear of a few quiet, elderly gentlemen as eating an annual dinner together, and that is all the world knows of it. Thus easily have died out all efforts to establish such hereditary classes among us. Yet I can remember when it was jocosely said of some families of Massachusetts that they claimed to have had, in the time of Noah's deluge, a boat to themselves; and I can recall, on the other hand, when a social aspirant in



Boston asked, "Who belong to the really old families, grandmamma?" and that relative shook her weary head and said, "Mostly no one, my dear."

The advance in the standard of wealth in the last century is recognized by all as something formidable. In the writer's boyhood, John P. Cushing was the only man in Boston, or its vicinity, who was suspected of being a millionaire; and even in his case some regarded such wealth as incredible. He was an essentially modest, retiring man, and said to a lady of my acquaintance, who ventured to reproach him for having holes in his shoes, that he knew no real advantage of wealth, except to be able to wear one's old shoes without criticism. But what is a million dollars to-day? To the eyes of many it represents economy, almost poverty; at any rate, a step toward the almshouse. John Jacob Astor was said to be worth twenty millions, and that was such a colossal fortune, people had again to alter their standard of figures in arithmetic. After this, Commodore Vanderbilt's forty millions seemed but a step, and the next Vanderbilt's two hundred millions were not so wholly startling. Yet men looked with commiseration on the division of this last fortune by his published will. Sixty millions



to each of two sons, and the rest of the family cut off with ten millions apiece! Men felt like taking up a contribution in the churches. Yet what seemed even these wonders compared with the personal fortunes of the present day!

Let us look first at the alarming side of this rapid growth of wealth. First comes its possible interference with our whole system of local government. A successful merchant of the last generation in Boston felt the increasing burden of taxation so heavily that he moved from the city to a country town where his father had been a modest clergyman. Inquiring of the town officials as to his taxation, they hesitated a little to reply, as if wishing to deal gently with the brilliant fish thus migrating to their quiet pool. To solve the problem, he suggested that they send him the town bills as presented for the coming year, and let him try a financial experiment. He then paid them all in succession, and thereby saved twenty thousand dollars on his annual tax, as paid hitherto in Boston. The selectmen, meanwhile, collected of all other taxpayers their usual amount, made a separate fund of it, and spent that in securing the best roads and sign-boards in the county. It was all very well in this instance. But suppose a series of millionaires migrating to a series of country towns, what would

be the result, and how long before we should have a new form of feudalism? This was one question to be seriously raised, and soon there were others.

How is it all to end, men asked, this new development? Consider history, they said. We can readily understand how the castles on the Rhine went down. The traveler visits their terrible torture-chambers, their oubliettes, and then reads the tale of the free burghers, the weavers and lace-makers of the Low Countries who swept down that beautiful valley and made an end of feudalism. No such easy process suggests itself amid the complications of modern labor; and should a new race, born of sudden wealth, arise, what would it be? How many generations would it take to secure good manners, for instance, in the new masters of the community? What will become of the refinements of life, if all the guidance of good society is to be transferred to the hands of those who have spent the prime of their existence in making money?

It is to be noticed, moreover, that the very men who repudiated the coat-of-arms were the men most eager to assume it when they once had an excuse. How rarely do you find in society the men who have the courage to tell the exact truth about their own antecedents! It is so

exceptional that, wherever it is done, it fills us with admiration. Pope Urban IV was the son of a cobbler, and had pursued that vocation himself, and so, with proper pride, he used a cobbler's tools as his symbol. Bishop Willegis, who was brought up as a wheelwright, becoming at last a bishop, and being entitled to a coat-of-arms, found, when he went to take possession of his palace, that the little boys had been chalking wheels all over the walls. Being a man of sense, he put a wheel upon his coat-of-arms, and the little boys lost their fun, while the price of chalk went down.

Again, in Frankfort, over the door of the house where Goethe was born, may be seen the coat-of-arms assumed, in a manner, by his father. The elder Goethe was descended from a blacksmith, and he wished to put three horseshoes over his door for a crest; but his architect, wishing the fact to appear to the utmost advantage, wove those horseshoes into the shape of a musical lyre, and thus unconsciously predicted that within those walls the greatest of modern poets should be born. How fine is all this, yet how vainly one may watch along the streets of any fashionable watering-place for any carriage panel that might have been designed by Pope Urban, Bishop Willegis, or the elder Goethe; and how many of these panels

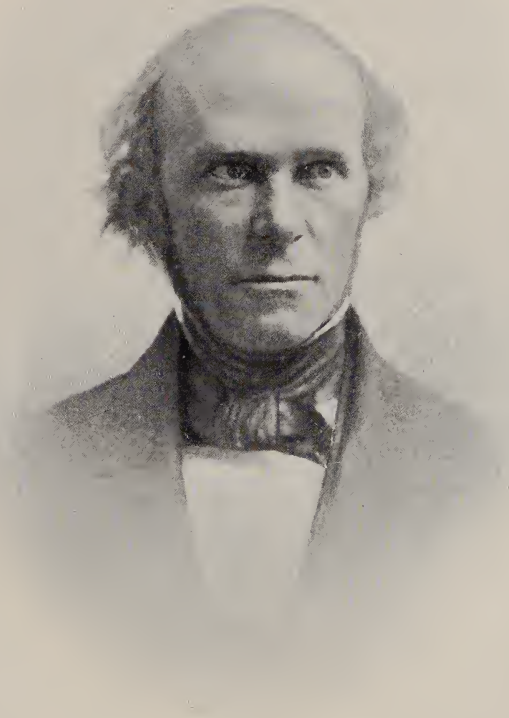
represent a dragon or unicorn or griffin, some creature out of whose hide and horn no one ever made a living since the world began. Not one of these even rivaled the traditional motto of Senator Philetus Sawyer of Wisconsin, who, having gained a fortune by the honest pursuit his name implied, adorned his carriage with the Latin word "Vidi," which, being translated, signifies "I saw."

No doubt there were facts enough on which to base all this solicitude, yet there is another side. The aristocracy based on the dollar has its own weaknesses and follies, but it has certain merits. Its first merit is that it belongs to the present, not to the past; it represents something that is being done, or has lately been done, whether for good or evil; not something which has long gone by. When Theodore Parker first visited Cincinnati, at that time the recognized leader among western cities, he said that he had made a great discovery, namely, that while the aristocracy of Cincinnati was unquestionably founded on pork, it made a great difference whether a man killed pigs for himself, or whether his father had killed them. The one was held plebeian, the other patrician. It was the difference, Parker said, between the *stick 'ems* and the *stuck 'ems*; and his own

sympathies, he confessed, were with the present tense. It was, in other words, aristocracy in the making. It stood for a race which had found forests to be cleared, streams to be bridged, and roads to be built; the dollar was not only behind these forms of service, but it was the corner-stone of the schoolhouse and the church. It predicted a civilization which should belong to to-day, not to yesterday; and belonging to to-day, should also predict to-morrow.

Out of this close allegiance to the present tense, the aristocracy of the dollar has derived several other advantages. It has always emerged, within a generation or two at the farthest, from the ranks of the plain people, and thus always seems nearer to them. It takes for that reason the color of its time. It is not too permanent. It finds sympathies at home, and spends its money there: in three quarters of the towns in Massachusetts, for example, you find a town hall or a public library that was presented by some native of the town. It is not easily crushed or even intimidated; so that it is not uncommon to find a man who has made one or two fortunes and lost them, and is now resting on his third. It appreciates other forms of influence than its own, and has a secret reverence for science, for history, and even for literature.





THEODORE PARKER





None are more ready than rich men to recognize that while one man makes money in business, another may devote himself to intellectual pursuits. The elder Agassiz once refused a profitable course of lectures on the ground that he had not, just then, the time to make money. If mere material wealth is all that is thought of among business men, he would have been thought fit for an insane hospital, but as it was, he was all the more respected. Those who say that our people look merely at wealth take a very superficial view. As a rule, men do not know who is the richest man in the next city or the next state. Mere wealth has, after all, a very limited reputation compared with that of intellect. An English novelist comes here, and every town hall is open to him; a Swedish peasant girl comes to sing to us, and we pay any price to hear. Bring forward your art and your genius, the community seems to say, and we will provide the money. Let an ordinary millionaire land at the wharf, on the other hand, and no more attention is paid to him than if he were an ex-governor. The very fact that the pursuit of wealth among us demands rare talent and energy seems of itself to create respect for those same qualities when manifested in other ways.

Why did the aristocracy of parentage fail to hold its own? Why did it die out in America and, practically speaking, in all the British colonies? It had every advantage at the outset; it held the inside track. It failed because two great laws of the universe were against it: first, the laws of arithmetic, and, secondly, the laws of physiology. It violated the principles of arithmetic because it required that each individual or household should have a distinct line of ancestors, and it would thus be discovered in a few generations that there were not nearly enough ancestors to go round, leaving people in the position of Mark Twain, who declared that he had "no parents to speak of, only a father and mother or so." It was contrary to the laws of physiology, as shown by the deterioration of one royal family after another in Europe, these having come to resemble those English race horses which have so much blood that there is very little horse, and it must be replenished from a more plebeian stock.

To sum it all up, the strength of hereditary aristocracy lay, undoubtedly, in a sort of accumulated self-respect; the coats-of-arms may or may not have been given originally for great deeds, but memory or imagination gradually assigned them to that origin as time went on. As Marmontel nicely defined it, "Nobility

of birth is a letter of credit given us on our country, upon the security of our ancestors, in the conviction that at a proper period of life we shall acquit ourselves with honor to those who stand engaged for us." On the other hand, the strength of the newer form of aristocracy lies in its greater nearness to the community at large, as being of more recent and tangible origin, and as usually showing some special visible gift or faculty in those who represent it. Its beginning may have been never so humble, yet these qualities bear some vague promise of its future.

The thing which most puzzled that early traveler in America, Captain Basil Hall, in 1827, was to see on the high road a pig-driver wearing spectacles; and it is only a few years since a newly arrived Englishman mentioned to me, as something requiring explanation, that he had seen somebody in a full suit of black broadcloth feeding hogs. I had a call, many years since, from a young lady, well-dressed, well-bred, and of American birth, who wished to be hired to do housework, and stipulated that she should bring her own piano. I met lately a man whose professions were farming, cigar-making, running a sawmill, ice-cutting, sailing a fishing schooner, and peddling parched-corn candy balls. The average life of

a college boy might furnish material for that book entitled the "Romance of a Poor Young Man;" and we all make a living, as Shakespeare's Touchstone threatens to kill his rival, in a hundred and fifty different ways. No doubt plenty of young people are now born rich, but they are very rarely people whose grandparents had that experience. The community watches them with some interest to discover whether they are to furnish new illustrations of the rural American proverb that it takes but three generations to go from shirt-sleeves to shirt-sleeves. .

After all, the worship of the dollar is but the foam upon the advancing wave of modern civilization. It breaks into spray and vanishes, even while we gaze. Even now there are not a score of men in America who are known by name throughout the land for their wealth alone; but a young man who makes a single brilliant speech at a political meeting, or a young girl who writes a clever story, may wake up some fine morning and encounter a fame spread from Maine to California, before either of them has made enough money out of it to pay a washerwoman's bill. "The whole interest of history," says Emerson, "lies in the fortunes of the poor." All the novels are full of

the enjoyments of wealth; but who celebrates the joys of poverty? The pride of its little prudences, the joy of its wholesome abstinences, the magnificent delight of its occasional holidays; — who but Dickens ever described them? Who but his little Jacob ever knew what oysters were, or really saw a play? Enjoyment does not lie in quantity but in quality. The first book is worth the library; the first cheap engraving may give more lasting pleasure than the picture gallery that follows. How few really cheerful faces one sees in the carriages on a fashionable avenue; in the carriage, for instance, of Mrs. Cræsus, who thinks it her duty to drive, “in order to air the horses.” But what unutterable bliss is the Sunday afternoon drive to the overworked clerk, who has been putting by the two dollars for at least two years, and lying awake at night to decide on the cheapest livery stable! True, Mrs. Cræsus has the felicity of being the more stared at, but the young man has the profounder felicity of not caring whether he is stared at or not, so long as he — and the young woman — enjoy themselves. Thus the little boy who was seen asleep at the theatre, night after night, explained, toward the end of the season, to the sympathetic and inquiring stranger who waked him, “Ah, but you see, I have to come, I’ve



got a season ticket!" Alas for wealth, which has season tickets for everything and gets the full relish out of nothing!

If the general tenor of this essay is thus far correct, it may be claimed that the aristocracy of the millionaires is only a prelude to the aristocracy of the millions. We talk of the upper ten thousand now, and may talk of the upper ten million by and by, and so on toward the whole population. As this advance is gradually made, we need not fear but that all the proprieties of life will follow, even if slowly. It is really a greater step to have taught a whole people to read and write than to have taught them all to carry themselves politely and to use their forks properly. I can remember well, in American traveling fifty years ago, that one met with scarcely a person who did not eat with the knife; whereas now one would think, in hotel or steamboat, that every man was born, not with a silver spoon, but with a silver fork in his mouth. Once, in those days, a friend of mine, using a choice phrase at a western steamboat table, was hailed by an unexpected voice: "That's a very pretty word you made use of, stranger. Would you have the goodness to repeat that word?" Such a condition of things made much of the popularity of English novels

at that period. They were handbooks of good manners for a public longing to be taught. Here were already twenty-five million people eager to learn the manners of duchesses. This spread the new fashions ; in older countries, dress was a badge ; the cook would lose her place if she ventured to wear a bonnet like that of her mistress. Here, if the mistress objected to the bonnet, she would lose her cook.

In all this process of gradual development, wealth naturally takes the lead upon a path which tends, on the whole, upward. The aristocracy of the dollar may or may not prepare the way for anything better than its predecessor, but it will have its day. The aristocracy of birth yields, though reluctantly. A story is told of an Englishman who, after a delightful chat with Thackeray, whom he met as a stranger at a club in London, upon being told that it was a famous author to whom he had been talking, replied with surprise, " Is he an author ? I had taken him for a gentleman." So Dr. Johnson, nearly two centuries ago, had defined an English merchant as " a new species of gentleman," and Lord Stanhope said, with undoubted truth, that the only trade in which an English gentleman could then engage was that of a wine merchant. Travelers tell us of an instance in Scotland where, at a dinner party,

an upper servant was sent round beforehand to inquire how many acres of land each guest had inherited, so that they might be arranged at the table in their proper order. How childish these discriminations appear in a land where, as the newspapers lately informed us, a single resident of Rochester, New York, owned four hundred farms in different states in the Union, including thirty-five thousand acres in the state of Kentucky alone; or where, as was stated not long since, one American citizen controlled two great telegraph lines across the continent and four out of the seven New York daily papers!

That the new aristocracy will have its own problems to meet is plain enough. One great problem lies already in the foreground. In Mr. Bodley's "France," generally recognized as one of the ablest of modern social studies, he tells us that in all the leading modern nations, whether styled republican or otherwise, society is no longer complex, but has practically become divided into only two social classes: "that which gains a livelihood by manual toil, and that which earns a living in other ways, or subsists on the interest of capital" (i, 9). Is this easy conclusion justified? Now that mercantile life has come to be, as in America, a gentleman's employment, who can help seeing

that it only involves a question of time for mechanical occupations to receive the same recognition? Who can go into a machine-shop of the present day without thinking how much more of intellect dwells in those wheels and bands than in the majority, not merely of counting-rooms, but even of court-rooms and pulpits?

## VI

### “INTENSELY HUMAN”

WHEN Major-General Rufus Saxton, then military governor of South Carolina, was solving triumphantly the original problem of the emancipated slaves, he was frequently interrupted by long lists of questions from Northern philanthropists as to the progress of his enterprise. They inquired especially as to the peculiar tastes, temptations, and perils of the newly emancipated race. After receiving one unusually elaborate catechism of this kind, he said rather impatiently to his secretary, “Draw a line across that whole list of questions about the freedmen, and write at the bottom, ‘They are intensely human,’” which was done. In those four words is given, in my opinion, the whole key to that problem perennially reviving,—the so-called “negro question.”

There prevailed, nearly sixty years ago, at the outset of the anti-slavery movement, a curious impression that the only people who understood the negro were those who had seen

him in a state of subjection, and that those who advocated his cause at the North knew nothing about him. A similar delusion prevails at the present day, and not alone among those born and bred in the Southern states. I find in a book, otherwise admirable, — a recent *Life of Whittier*, — that the biographer not only speaks of the original anti-slavery movement as “extravagant and ill-informed,” but says of Whittier and his associates, “Of the real negro, his capacities and limitations, he had, like his fellows, only a dim idea, based largely on theoretic speculation.” But, as a matter of fact, the whole movement originated with men who had learned by personal observation that the negro was intensely human, and who believed all necessary knowledge to be included in that fact. They were men and women who had been born in the slave country, or had personally resided there for years, if not for life. Benjamin Lundy in Virginia, Rankin in Tennessee, Garrison in Maryland, Birney in Alabama, Channing in Virginia again, and the Grimké sisters in South Carolina, had gained on the spot that knowledge of slavery and slaves which made them Abolitionists. They had made observations, and some of them — acting on the poet Gray’s maxim that memory is ten times worse than a lead pencil — had written them down.



Added to this, they were constantly in communication with those who had escaped from slavery, and the very closeness of contact into which the two classes were thrown gave them added knowledge of each other. Indeed, the very first anti-slavery book which attained wide attention, known as "Walker's Appeal," published in 1829, was not written by a Northern man, but by one born in Wilmington, South Carolina, of a free mother and a slave father, a man who had traveled widely through the South, expressly to study the degradation of his race, and had read what books of history he could procure bearing upon the subject. His book went through three editions; it advocated insurrection more and more directly. But it was based absolutely on the Declaration of Independence, and on the theory that the negro was a man.

It must be borne in mind that there never yet was an oppressed race which was not assumed by its oppressors to be incapable of freedom. In a late volume of diplomatic correspondence compiled from letters of an Englishman (Anthony B. North Peat), written in 1864-69 during the sway of Louis Napoleon, the letter-writer lays it down as a rule (p. 38) that "A Frenchman is not fit to be trusted with liberty. . . . A Frenchman is, more or less, born to be rode roughshod over, and he himself is posi-

tively happier when ruled with a rod of iron." Forty years have now passed since this was written, and who now predicts the extinction of the French Republic? It turned out just the same with those who predicted that the colored race in America was fitted only for slavery and would never attain freedom.

If I may refer to my own experience as one of the younger Abolitionists, I can truly say that my discovery of the negro's essential manhood first came, long before I had heard of the anti-slavery agitation, from a single remark of a slave made to my mother when she was traveling in Virginia in my childhood. After some efforts on her part to convince him that he was well off, he only replied, "Ah! Missis, free breath is good!" There spoke, even to my childish ear, the instinctive demand of the human being. To this were afterwards added my own observations when visiting in the same state during a college vacation, at the age of seventeen, and observing the actual slaves on a plantation; which experience was afterwards followed by years of intimate acquaintance with fugitive slaves in Massachusetts. It was the natural result of all this that, when called upon in maturer life to take military command of freed slaves, it never occurred to me to doubt that they would fight like any other men for

their liberty, and so it proved. Yet I scarcely ever met a man or woman of Southern birth, during all that interval, who would not have laughed at the very thought of making them soldiers. They were feared as midnight plotters, as insurrectionists, disciples of Nat Turner, whose outbreak in 1831 filled the South with terror; but it was never believed, for a moment, that they would stand fire in the open field like men. Yet they proved themselves intensely human and did it.

Nor was their humanity recognized by the general public sentiment, even at the North, in earlier days. Even in Massachusetts, law or custom not only forbade any merchant or respectable mechanic to take a colored apprentice, but any common carrier by land or sea was expected to eject from his conveyance any negro on complaint of any white passenger; and I can myself remember when a case of this occurred in Cambridge in my childhood, within sight of the Washington Elm. Churches still had negro pews, these being sometimes boarded up in front, so that the occupants could only look out through peep-holes, as was once done in the old Baptist meeting-house at Hartford, Connecticut, where a negro had bought a pew and refused to leave it. Or the owner might be ejected by a constable, as happened in Park Street

Church, Boston; or the floor be cut from under the negro's pew by the church authorities, as happened in Stoughton, Massachusetts. Even in places like the Quaker town of New Bedford, where pupils of both colors were admitted to the public schools, the black boys were seated by themselves, and white offenders were punished by being obliged to sit with them. So far was this carried that it excited the indignation of the European world, insomuch that Heine in his letters from Heligoland (July 1, 1830) gives it as an argument against emigrating to the United States, as Lieber and Follen had done: "Die eigentliche Sklaverei, die in den meisten nordamerikanischen Provinzen abgeschafft, empört mich nicht so sehr wie die Brutalität womit die freien Schwarzen und die Mulatten behandelt werden." The negro was still regarded, both in the Northern and in the Southern states, as being something imperfectly human. It was only the Abolitionists who saw him as he was. They never doubted that he would have human temptations — to idleness, folly, wastefulness, even sensuality. They knew that he would need, like any abused and neglected race, education, moral instruction, and, above all, high example. They knew, in short, all that we know about him now. They could have predicted the outcome of such

half-freedom as has been given him, — a freedom tempered by chain-gangs, lynching, and the lash.

It may be assumed, therefore, that there is no charge more unfounded than that frequently made to the effect that the negro was best understood by his former masters. It would be more reasonable to say that the negro as a human being was really least comprehended by those to whom he represented merely a check for a thousand dollars, or less, from a slave auctioneer. This principle may be justly borne in mind in forming an opinion upon the very severest charges still brought against him. Thus a Southern negro has only to be suspected of any attempt at assault on a white woman, and the chances are that he will be put to death without trial, and perhaps with fiendish torture. Yet during my two years' service with colored troops, only one charge of such assault was brought against any soldier, and that was withdrawn in the end and admitted to be false by the very man who made the assertion; and this in a captured town. But even supposing him to have a tendency to such an offense, does any one suppose for a moment that the mob which burns him on suspicion of such a crime is doing it in defense of chastity? Not at all; it is in defense of caste.





5875

Charleston, W. Va. 1854

Received of *Wm. J. Little & Co. Merchants*  
*U. S. Twenty five* Dollars, being in full for the purchase of a  
Negro Slave named *Wilson* about *Twenty five* pounds  
the right and title of said Slave I warrant and defend against the claims of  
all persons whatsoever and likewise warrant *him* sound and healthy.

As witness my hand and seal.

*Wm. J. Little*

*Wm. J. Little*

SEAL

Sold by James B. Gibb, Bookseller, Richmond.



This is to show that the within named  
Negro Man Slave Poison was  
purchased by me as Agent for  
Edward Popkin's

Feb-8-1854

W. L. Titus Agt.

To decide its real character, we need only ask what would happen if the facts proved to be the reverse of those at first assumed,— if the woman had, after all, the slightest tinge of negro blood, and the offending man turned out to be a white man. Does anybody doubt that the case would be dismissed by acclamation in an instant, that the criminal would go free, and the victim be forgotten? If I err, then the books of evidence are all wrong, the tales of fugitives in the old days are all false. Was any white man ever lynched, either before or since emancipation, for insulting the modesty of a colored girl? Look in the autobiographies of slaves, dozens of which are in our public libraries! Look in the ante-bellum newspapers, or search the memories of those who, like the present writer, were employed on vigilance committees and underground railways before most of the present lynchings were born!

There were, again and again, women known to us who had fled to save their honor,— women so white that, like Ellen Craft, they passed in traveling for Caucasian. One such woman was under my observation for a whole winter in Worcester, who brought away with her the two children of her young master, whose mistress she had been, in spite of herself, and who was believed by many to have been her

half-brother. So nearly white were she and her children that they were escorted up from Boston by a Worcester merchant, himself proslavery in sympathy, under whose care they had been skillfully put at the Boston station by the agent of the underground railway. They finally passed into the charge of an honorable man, a white mechanic, who married the woman with the full approval of the ladies who had her in charge. I never knew or wished to know his name, thinking it better that she and her children should disappear, as they easily could, in the white ranks. Another slave child, habitually passing for white, was known to the public as "Ida May," and was exhibited to audiences as a curiosity by Governor Andrew and others, until that injudicious practice was stopped. She, too, was under my care for a time, went to school, became clerk in a public office, and I willingly lost sight of her also for a very similar reason. It must never be forgotten that every instance of slaves almost white, in those days, was not the outcome of legal marriage, but of the ungoverned passion of some white man. The evil was also self-multiplying, since the fairer the complexion of every half-breed girl, the greater her attraction and her perils. Those who have read that remarkable volume of Southern stories, written in New Orleans

by Grace King, under the inexpressive title of "Tales of a Time and Place," will remember the striking scene where a mob, which had utterly disregarded the danger run by a young girl who had passed for a mere octoroon, is lashed instantly into overpowering tumult when evidence is suddenly advanced at the last that she is not octoroon, but white.

Supposing, for the sake of argument, that there is to be found in the colored race, especially in the former slave states, a lower standard of chastity than among whites, it is hard to imagine any reasoning more grotesque than that which often comes from those who claim to represent the white race there. One recent writer from New Orleans in the Boston "Herald" describes the black race as being "in great part immoral in its sexual relations, whether from centuries of savagery or from nature, as some of the travelers insisted." This needs only to be compared with the testimony of another Southern witness to show its folly. In a little book entitled "Two Addresses on Negro Education in the South," Mr. A. A. Gunby of the Louisiana bar makes this simple statement: "Miscegenation in the South has always been and will always be confined to converse between white men and colored women, and the number of mulattoes in the future will

depend absolutely on the extent to which white men restrain their immoral dealings with negro females." This same writer goes on to say, what would seem to be the obvious common sense of the matter, that "education is the best possible means to fortify negro women against the approaches of libertines."

For my own part, I have been for many years in the position to know the truth, even on its worst side, upon this subject. Apart from the knowledge derived in college days from Southern students, then very numerous at Harvard, with whom I happened to be very much thrown through a Southern relative, my classmate, I have evidence much beyond this. I have in my hands written evidence, unfit for publication, but discovered in a captured town during the Civil War, — evidence to show that Rome in its decline was not more utterly degraded, as to the relation between the sexes, than was the intercourse often existing between white men and colored women on American slave plantations. How could it be otherwise where one sex had all the power and the other had no means of escape? Rufus Choate, one of the most conservative Northern men of the time as to the slavery question, is said to have expressed the opinion, as the result of careful study, that he had no reason to think that the



industrial condition of the slave, all things considered, was worse than that of the laboring population in most European countries, but that for the colored woman the condition of slavery was "simply hell." The race of mixed blood in America is the outcome of that condition; and that the colored race has emerged from such subjugation into the comparatively decent moral condition which it now holds proves conclusively that it is human in its virtues as well as in its sins. This I say as one who has been for nearly ten years trustee of a school for freedmen in the heart of the black district. The simple fact, admitted by all candid men and women, that no charges of immorality are ever brought against the graduates of these schools, and that, wherever they go, they are the centre of a healthy influence, is sufficient proof that what the whole nation needs is to deal with the negro race no longer as outcasts, but simply as men and women.

If thus dealt with, why should the very existence of such a race be regarded as an insuperable evil? The answer is that the tradition lies solely in the associations of slavery. Outside of this country, such insuperable aversion plainly does not exist; not even is it to be found in the land nearest to us in kindred, England. A relative of mine, a Boston lady



distinguished in the last generation for beauty and bearing, was staying in London with her husband, fifty years ago, when they received a call at breakfast time from a mulatto of fine appearance, named Prince Sanders, whom they had known well as a steward, or head waiter, in Boston. She felt that she ought to ask him, as a fellow countryman, to sit down at table with them, but she shrank from doing it until he rose to go; and then, in a cowardly manner, as she frankly admitted, stammered out the invitation. To which his reply was, "Thank you, madam, but I am engaged to breakfast with the Prince of Wales this morning," which turned out to be true. No one can watch the carriages in Hyde Park, still less in Continental capitals, without recognizing the merely local quality of all distinct social antagonism between races. In a letter to the Boston "Herald," dated September 17, 1903, the writer, Bishop Douet of Jamaica, testifies that there is a large class of colored people who there fill important positions as ministers of religion, doctors, and lawyers. He says: "This element in our society that I have alluded to is the result of miscegenation, which the writers from the South seem to look upon with so much horror. We have not found that the mixing of the races has produced such dire results. I number

among my friends many of this mixed race who are as accomplished and intelligent ladies and gentlemen as you can find in any society in Boston or the other great cities of America.”

In connection with this, Bishop Douet claims that the masses of the colored population in all parts of the island are absolutely orderly, and that a white woman may travel from one end of the land to the other with perfect safety. All traces of the terrible period of the Maroon wars seem to have vanished, wars which lasted for nine years, during which martial law prevailed throughout the whole island, and high military authorities said of the Maroons that “their subjugation was more difficult than to obtain a victory over any army in Europe.” These rebels, or their descendants, are the people who now live in a condition of entire peace and order, in spite of all the predicted perils of freedom. One of these perils, as we know, was supposed to be that of a mixture of blood between the races, but even that is found no longer a source of evil, this witness thinks, when concubinage has been replaced by legal marriage.

Among the ways in which the colored race shows itself intensely human are some faults which it certainly shares with the white race, besides the merely animal temptations. There is the love of fine clothes, for instance; the

partiality for multiplying sects in religion, and secret societies in secular life; the tendency toward weakening forces by too much subdivision; the intolerance shown toward free individual action. It is only the last which takes just now a somewhat serious form. It is a positive calamity that a few indiscretions and exaggerations on each side have developed into a bitter hostility to Booker Washington on the part of some of the most intelligent and even cultivated of his race. Internal feuds among philanthropists are, alas, no new story, and few bodies of reformers have escaped this peril. When we consider the bitter contest fought between Charles Sumner and his opponents in the Prison Discipline Society; the conflicts in the early temperance meetings between Total Abstainers and Teetotalers; those in the Woman Suffrage Movement between Mrs. Woodhull and her opponents, and in the anti-slavery movement itself between the voting and non-voting Abolitionists, we must not censure the warring negro reformer too severely. Nay, consider the subdivisions of the Garrison Abolitionists themselves, after slavery itself was abolished, at a period when I remember to have seen Edmund Quincy walk halfway up a stairway, and turn suddenly round to descend, merely to avoid Wendell Phillips, who

Oct 27

Dear Mr. H.:

I listened delighted  
with the rest to your grand  
lecture last night. It  
carrying you to Newcastle  
to contribute anything to  
your lavish wealth of  
illustration - But I've  
a memory of a story which  
you might use to  
illustrate what you  
say, near your commence-  
ment, of facts & figures,  
correcting our "way  
debations about barbarism  
or old world height as  
Vulture & others' sentence

Louis XIV as very tall  
you'd suppose him very near  
if not wholly six feet,  
when 1791 uncovered  
his bones it was found  
he could not have, with all  
allowances more than  
5ft 8 inches -

so much old court  
blaze saddle seen Voltaire -

Yours  
W. Phillips

The item I picked up  
in some memoir a review  
15 years ago - you'll easily  
light on it since you seem  
to mow out everything -  
if indeed you don't know it already



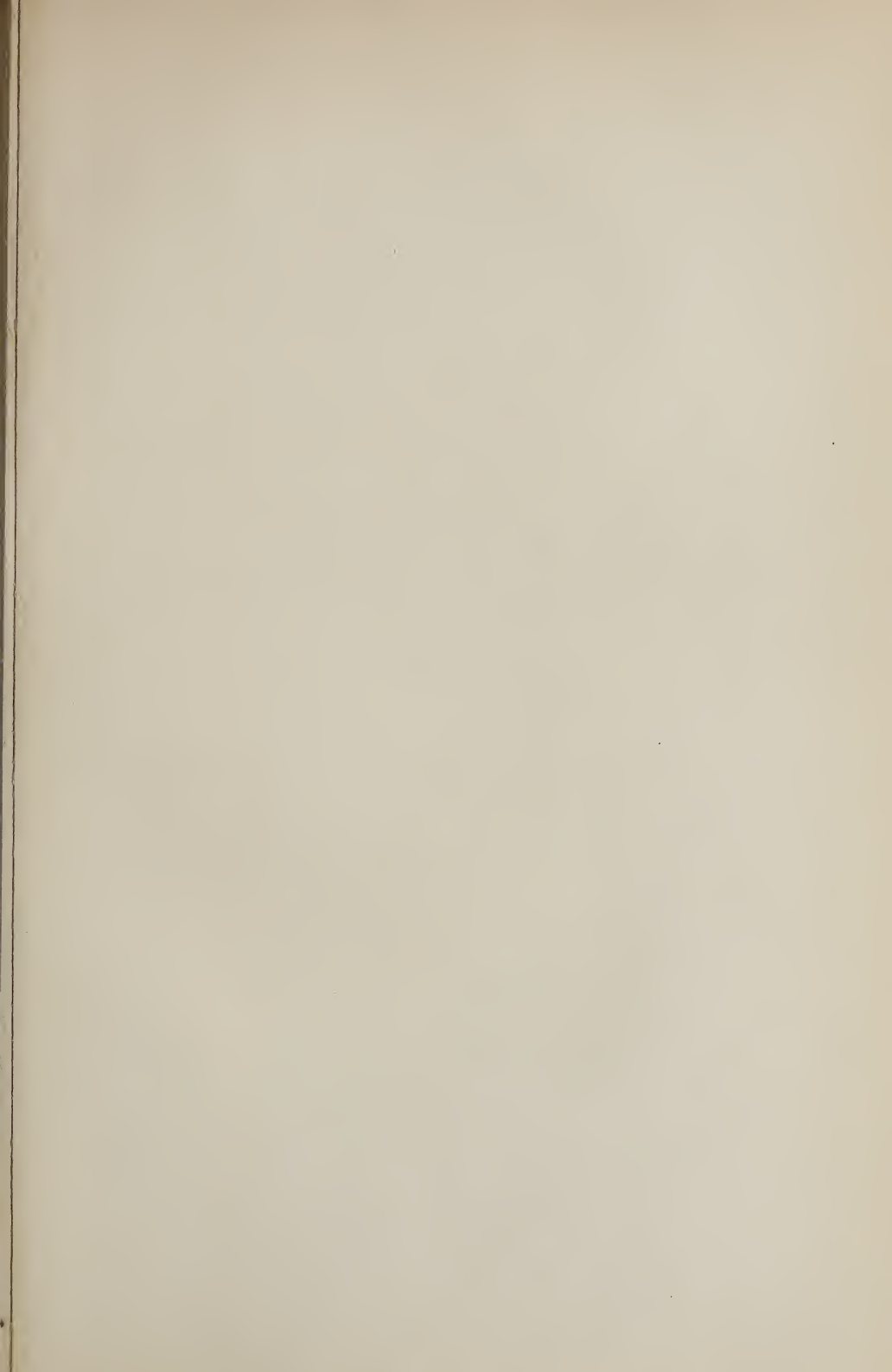
---

was coming downstairs! Having worked side by side together through storm and through calm, having been denounced, threatened, and even mobbed side by side, the two men had yet separated in bitterness on the interpretation of a will made by a fellow laborer, Francis Jackson. When we look, indeed, beyond the circle of moral reformers, and consider simply the feuds of science, we see the same thing: Dr. Gould, the eminent astronomer, locking his own observatory against his own trustees to avoid interference; and Agassiz, in the height of the Darwinian controversy, denying that there was any division on the subject among scientific men, on the ground that any man who accepted the doctrine of evolution ceased thereby to be a man of science. If questions merely intellectual thus divide the leaders of thought, how can we expect points that divide men on the basis of conscience and moral service to be less potent in their influence? In the present case, as in most cases, the trouble seems chiefly due to the difficulty found by every energetic and enthusiastic person, absorbed in his own pursuits, in fully appreciating the equally important pursuits of others. Booker Washington, in urging the development of the industrial pursuits he represents, has surely gone no farther than Frederick Douglass, the acknow-



ledged leader of his people, who said, "Every colored mechanic is by virtue of circumstances an elevator of his race." On the other hand, the critics of Mr. Washington are wholly right in holding that it is as important for this race to produce its own physicians, lawyers, preachers, and above all, teachers, as to rear mechanics; and he accordingly summoned the Harvard Class Orator of the year — Mr. Bruce — to be the head of the department of letters at Tuskegee. It is infinitely to be regretted that everybody cannot look at every matter all round, but this, unhappily, is a form of human weakness in which there is no distinction of color.

It must always be remembered that all forward movements have their experimental stage. In looking over, at this distance of time, the letters and printed editorials brought out by the enterprise of arming the blacks in our Civil War, I find that it was regarded by most people as a mere experiment. It now seems scarcely credible that I should have received, as I did, on first undertaking it, a letter from a sympathizer in Boston, recalling to my memory that Roman tradition of a body of rebellious slaves who were brought back to subjection, even after taking up arms, by a body of men armed with whips only. This correspondent anxiously warned me that the same method



1911

Sir  
Having  
& courage. I do  
of my aids  
friends of Kansas  
To J. W. Higgins

You will not  
Physician for

G. S. H.

Quincy K. Fos

September 18. <sup>th</sup> 1856

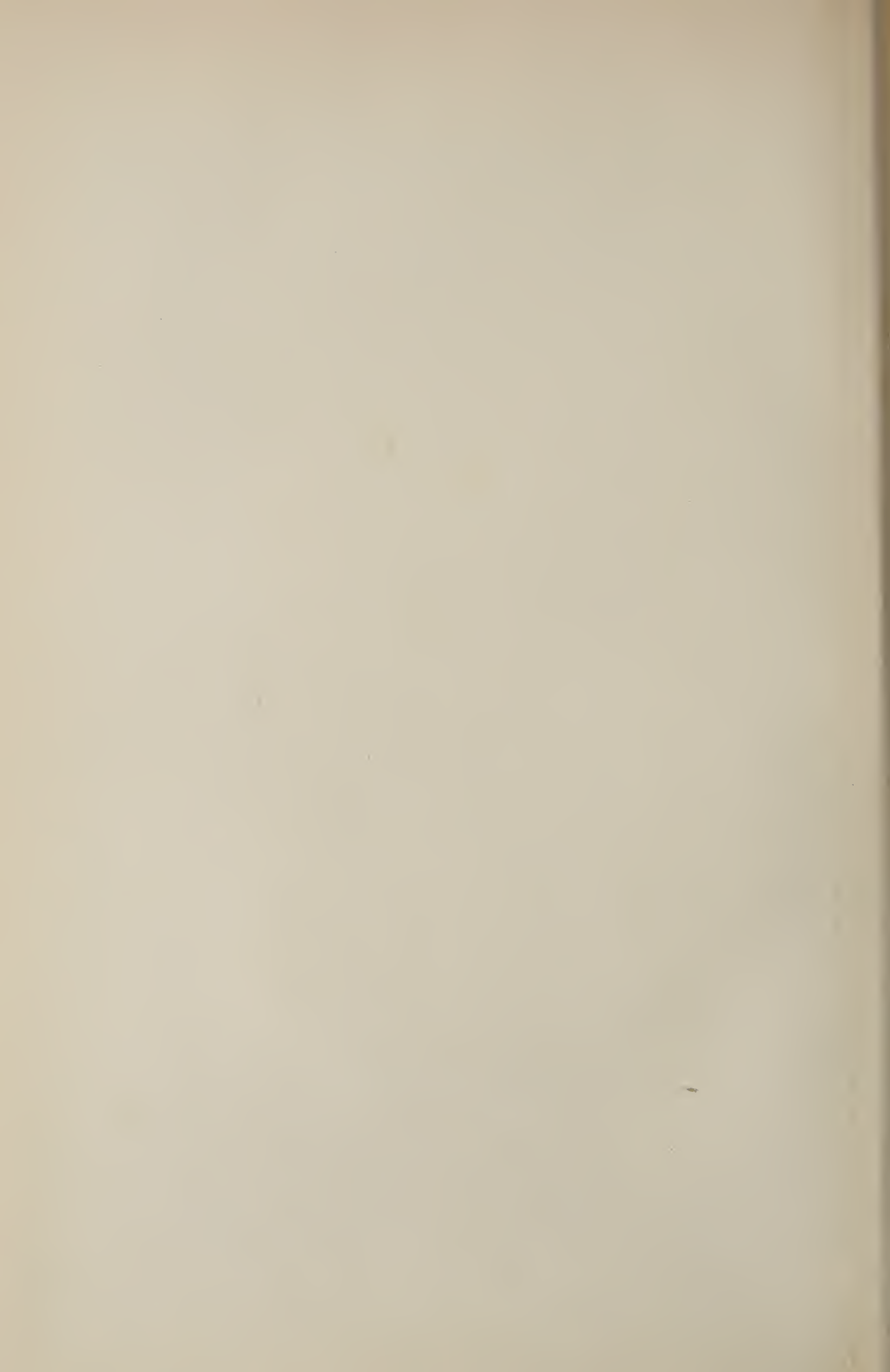
Confided in your ability  
to carry out the  
By authority of the  
article in me

W. G. M.

Com. G.

put yourself at  
my disposal  
L.

W. G. M.  
Com. G.



might be repeated. Yet it seems scarcely more credible that the young hero, Colonel Shaw, when I rode out to meet him, on his arrival with his Northern colored regiment, seriously asked me whether I felt perfectly sure that the negroes would stand fire in line of battle, and suggested that, at the worst, it would at least be possible to drive them forward by having a line of white soldiers advance in their rear, so that they would be between two fires. He admitted the mere matter of individual courage to have been already settled in their case, and only doubted whether they would do as well in line of battle as in skirmishing and on guard duty. Nor do I intend to imply that he had any serious doubt beyond this, but simply that the question had passed through his mind. He did not sufficiently consider that in this, as at all other points, they were simply men.

We must also remember that a common humanity does not by any means exclude individual variety, but rather protects it. At first glance, in a black regiment, the men usually looked to a newly arrived officer just alike, but it proved after a little experience that they varied as much in face as any soldiers. It was the same as to character. Yet at the same time they were on the whole more gregarious and cohesive than the whites; they preferred organ-



ization, whereas nothing pleased white American troops so much as to be out skirmishing, each on his own responsibility, without being bothered with officers. There was also a certain tropical element in black troops, a sort of fiery utterance when roused, which seemed more Celtic than Anglo-Saxon. The only point where I was doubtful, though I never had occasion to test it, was that they might show less endurance under prolonged and hopeless resistance, like Napoleon's men when during the retreat from Russia they simply drooped and died.

As to the general facts of courage and reliability, I think that no officer in my camp ever thought of there being any essential difference between black and white; and surely the judgment of these officers, who were risking their lives at every moment, month after month, on the fidelity of their men, was worth more than the opinion of the world besides. As the negroes were intensely human at these points, they were equally so in claiming that they had more to fight for than the white soldiers. They loved the United States flag, and I remember one zealous corporal, a man of natural eloquence, pointing to it during a meeting on the Fourth of July, and saying with more zeal than statistical accuracy, "Dar's dat flag, we

hab lib under it for eighteen hundred and sixty-two years, and we 'll lib and die for it now." But they could never forget that, besides the flag and the Union, they had home and wife and child to fight for. War was a very serious matter to them. They took a grim satisfaction when orders were issued that the officers of colored troops should be put to death on capture. It helped their *esprit de corps* immensely. Their officers, like themselves, were henceforward to fight with ropes around their necks. Even when the new black regiments began to come down from the North, the Southern soldiers pointed out this difference, that in case of ultimate defeat, the Northern troops, black or white, must sooner or later be exchanged and returned to their homes, whereas they themselves must fight it out or be reënslaved. All this was absolutely correct reasoning, and showed them human.

As all individuals differ, even in the same family, so there must doubtless be variations between different races. It is only that these differences balance one another so that all are human at last. Each race, like each individual, may have its strong point. Compare, for instance, the negroes and the Irish-Americans. So universal among negroes is the possession of a musical ear that I frequently had reason

to be grateful for it as a blessing, were it only for the fact that those who saw colored soldiers for the first time always noticed it and exaggerated its importance. Because the negroes kept a better step, after forty-eight hours' training, than did most white regiments after three or four months, these observers expressed the conviction that the blacks would fight well; which seemed to me, perhaps, a hasty inference. As to the Irish-Americans, I could say truly that a single recruit of that race in my original white company had cost me more trouble in training him to keep step than all my black soldiers put together. On the other hand, it was generally agreed that it was impossible to conceive of an Irish coward; the Irish being, perhaps, as universally brave as any race existing. Now, I am not prepared to say that in the colored race cowardice would be totally impossible, nor could that be claimed, absolutely, for the Anglo-Saxon race. On the other hand, to extend the comparison, it would not have been conceivable to me that a black soldier should be a traitor to his own side, and it is unquestionable that there were sometimes Irish deserters. All this variety is according to the order of nature. The world would be very monotonous if all human beings had precisely the same combination of strong and

weak points. It is enough that they should all be human.

In regard to warmth of heart and open demonstrativeness, the negroes and the Irish have much in common, and it is an attribute which makes them both attractive. The same may be held true of the religious element. No matter how reckless in bearing they might be, those negroes were almost fatalists in their confidence that God would watch over them; and if they died, it would be because their time had come. "If each one of us was a praying man," said one of my corporals in a speech, "it appears to me that we could fight as well with prayers as with bullets, for the Lord has said that if you have faith even as a grain of mustard seed cut into four parts, you can say to the sycamore tree 'Arise,' and it will come up." And though Corporal Long's botany may have got a little confused, his faith proved itself by works, for he volunteered to go many miles on a solitary scouting expedition into the enemy's country in Florida, and got back safe after he had been given up for lost. On the whole, it may be said that the colored and the Irish soldiers were a little nearer to one another than to the Anglo-Saxon type; and that both were nearer to the Western recruits, among Americans, than to the more reticent

and self-controlled New England men. Each type had its characteristics, and all were intensely human.

All these judgments, formed in war, have thus far sustained themselves in peace. The enfranchisement of the negroes, once established, will of course never be undone. They have learned the art, if not of political self-defense, at least of migration from place to place, and those states which are most unjust to them will in time learn to prize their presence and regret their absence. The chances are that the mingling of races will diminish, but whether this is or is not the outcome, it is, of course, better for all that this result should be legal and voluntary, rather than illegal and perhaps forced. As the memories of the slave period fade away, the mere fetich of color-phobia will cease to control our society; and marriage may come to be founded, not on the color of the skin, but upon the common courtesies of life, and upon genuine sympathies of heart and mind. To show how high these sympathies might reach even in slavery, I turn back to a letter received by one of my soldiers from his wife,—a letter which I have just unearthed from a chaos of army papers where it has lain untouched for forty years. It is still inclosed in a quaint envelope of a pattern



devised in Philadelphia at that day, and greatly in demand among the negroes. This shows a colored print of the tree of liberty bearing in the place of leaves little United States flags, each labeled with the name of some state, while the tree bears the date "1776" at its roots. The letter is addressed to "Solomon Steward, Company H., 1st S. C. Vols., Beaufort, S. C.," this being the name of a soldier in my regiment, who showed the letter to me and allowed me to keep it. He was one of the Florida men, who were, as a rule, better taught and more intelligent than the South Carolina negroes. They were therefore coveted as recruits by all my captains; and they had commonly been obliged on enlistment to leave their families behind them in Florida, not nearly so well cared for as those under General Saxton's immediate charge. The pay of my regiment being, moreover, for a long time delayed, these families often suffered in spite of all our efforts. I give the letter verbatim, and it requires no further explanation:—

FERNANDINA, FLORIDA, Feb. the 8 [1864].

MY DEAR HUSBAND,— This Hour I Sit Me  
Down To write you In a Little world of sweet  
sounds The Choir In The Chapel near Here  
are Chanting at The organ and Their Morn-



ing Hymn across The street are sounding and  
The Dear Little birds are joining Thair voices  
In Tones sweet and pure as angels whispers.  
but My Dear all The songs of The birds sounds  
sweet In My Ear but a sweeter song Than  
That I now Hear and That Is The song of a  
administing angel Has Come and borne My  
Dear Little babe To Join In Tones with Them  
sweet and pure as angels whispers. My babe  
only Live one day It was a Little Girl. Her  
name Is alice Gurtrude steward I am now sick  
In bed and have Got nothing To Live on The  
Rashion That They Give for six days I Can  
Make It Last but 2 days They dont send Me  
any wood They send The others wood and I  
Cant Get any I dont Get any Light at all You  
Must see To That as soon as possible for I  
am In in want of some Thing To Eat

I have nothing more to say to you but Give  
my Regards to all the friends all the family  
send thair love to you

no more at pressant

EMMA STEWARD

Does it need any further commentary to  
prove that the writer of a letter like this was  
intensely human?

## VII

### LETTERS OF MARK

"Letters . . . are of several kinds. First, there are those which are not letters at all, as letters patent, letters dimissory, letters enclosing bills . . . letters of marque, and letters generally, which are in no wise letters of mark."  
— Lowell's *The Biglow Papers*, First Series, No. VII.

ODD people write odd letters," was the unanswerable assertion of that else forgotten essayist, Bishop Thorold,—forgotten, even though his "Presence of Christ" went through twenty editions in his lifetime. Be this as it may, it is true of all of us that the letter represents the man, odd or even. It is, indeed, more absolutely the man, in one sense, than he himself is, for the man himself is inevitably changing, beyond his own control, from moment to moment, from birth to death; but the letter, once written, is an instantaneous photograph and stays forever unchanged. *Litera scripta manet*. If sincere, it is irrevocable, if insincere, it is equally so; and however artfully executed, it may be read between the lines, some time or other, and its hidden meaning unveiled. Let us by all means, therefore, devote a few pages to the odd letters.

The following letter is one of a class which every American journalist or magazinist, whose name becomes tolerably familiar to the public, may reasonably expect to receive every month or two. This arrived many years ago; and the daughter of this writer may well be addressing, by this time, some younger author in an equally confiding spirit. No other nationality, perhaps, would produce such a letter, and yet its fearless familiarity may have come from a simple soul whose frankness was its own defense.

— OHIO, 10, 27, '84.

DEAR SIR, — I am one of your girl admirers, I am! I know you 're sedate and grandfatherly and such an announcement wont startle you a bit! . . . We have one of your books in the circulating library in town, we always have read your articles — when I wore a *bib* I 'd read them in "Our Young Folks." . . .

Oh, I did forget the object of my call — I want to be reading a good history of Ireland and Scotland this winter. Please suggest what is best. I want nothing dry nor *pokey*; whatever you approve will suit me 'cause you 're so folksy! I would enjoy Irish legends and superstitions.

When my ship comes in I 'm going to Europe, ah, thereby hangs a tale! my folks smile whenever the subject comes up. Once upon a

time I nearly got a legacy! Why did n't I *get* it? A childless old widower in his dotage made a will giving to four girls his *gilders*. I was one of 'em, just as he was about to "shuffle off" — a little widow, bright and black eyed, inveigled the widdy man into a marriage and *she* got my "noble six hundred!"

And since he died this pesky widow, this scheming Vivian is *on the track* again a-trying to get into the good graces of *one of my admirers!*

The legacy business was a surprise to us girls and it did no harm, we all have homes and plenty, so I'll just go on being smiling and help rheumatic-y old men in wheel chairs across rough places in pavements and will get to Europe on my own cash. . . .

Please find enclosed a stamp for reply — and don't be shocked at my wild Western ways —  
Your Girl friend.

Another letter, proceeding from a different temperament and from a much remoter source, indicates the graver and still more daring spirit which was ready, even in what was then almost wilderness, to write Gibbon's "Roman Empire" or any other task demanding such a library as scarcely Washington or New York or Boston could then afford.

— DAKOTA, Nov. 13, 1886.

DEAR SIR, — In one of the Chicago papers (I have mislaid the article) I saw you quoted as saying that the field of literary work was *almost*, or quite, destitute of women who could write a really scholarly article on any given, or assigned subject. I may be unequal to the task, and I have not a Library of any size to consult on such subjects, but I would like to *try*. I am capable of study and have an easy pen. A little direction may be worth a good deal to me.

Very Resp'ly.

But from an Eastern metropolis itself came this more practical appeal with a view to business only.

NEW YORK CITY, Feb. 25, 1885.

DEAR SIR, — I am desirous of securing a humerous lecture for a lady to deliver through N. Y. State & possibly some in the West. I saw the notice of your lecture "New England Vagabond" in the Boston Papers & write to ask you if the same can be secured. If so upon what terms. I conclude from the title that it is humerous; is it not? Yours truly.

Then comes an appeal from the outer edge of literature, with the advantage of a foreign atmosphere and a picturesque name. Having



afterwards met the author, I can testify to his fine personal appearance, and to a power of gesture such as to suggest the necessity of those strictly pocketed hands demanded by his "pantomimeless friends." Alas! what budding orator but finds himself liable to repression by such friendship?

— Jan. 15th, 1900.

MY DEAR SIR, — I beg of you as a stranger, that I may be the recipient of your encouragement in my efforts to pronounce the words of Shakespeare.

I am beginning the study of some of the works of the Master and that from a dramatic standpoint, and "I see in them more than mortal knowledge."

I write you sir as a patron of learning and as a helper of young men that I may be given the opportunity to, if possible, give a reading of one hour's duration at your home for the sum of \$10.

Although being of a Syrian origin and have the Arabic for my mother tongue, yet "I have a mind that pressages me such thrift that I should questionless be fortunate," and I "Do now feel the future in the instant."

Permit me to state that I have the idea to excute after two years study six of the masterpieces of the Master word for word and to



produce the same with the aid of illustrations upon the screen and if possible to use moving characters to be taken from casts set for the purpose. This would in itself be an attraction in making Shakespeare more popular even with the use of my voice to speak the parts of all characters as they appear on the canvas.

At present I have two plays almost assimilated and registred in my memory and from these I would use portions if privileged by you some evening in the future (near?).

I think I am possessed with the requisits, that of voice and the dramatic instinct, coupled with a pair of strong lungs to propell the necessary atmosphere to the character living in my mind, whether it be that of Hamlet, Shylock, Portia or that of a clown.

I am told that my physical make up is very responsive to my imagination by way of movement and action, and it is so much so that I have to pocket my hands in order to conform myself to the pantomimeless friends here.

I crave again your pardon for obtruding myself on your kindness, and with best wishes and Salaam

I am most respectfully yours.

It is more plaintive still, perhaps, when a man of genuine and simple purpose, having

previously written to ask counsel as to books for his grandchildren, comes back four years later for a plan and "Spesefacations" to aid in building him a tanyard for those same grandchildren, in which the "difrent helps" may be put in the "most conviniant placeses." Where, but in America, one asks, are the different pursuits of literature and life brought so frankly and honestly together with compensation guaranteed in advance?

— PA. November 19, 1886.

I am sending thus at a ventur I was so succesful in geting Books through you so sutabel for my grandchildren in 1882.

I am bilding a tanyerd in houp that it may bi run by my grandsons. 40 by 100. intended to have atachments.

I want a plan and Spesefacations in Book pamflat or leflet form that wil gide the man that is Bulding the house in puting down the vats, and placing the difrent helps at ther levels, and most conviniant placeses.

whatever information you can help mi to I will pay for in advance, if you wish.

your Servt.

When to these elements of utter frankness in thought and freshness of words is added the fearless mixture of two distinct languages

in spelling, we come upon a new ground of interest, as seen in the following letter, addressed by a young German sculptress to a lady of my household. It is to be explained that she who wrote it had been making some preliminary attempts at modeling in plaster the head of one of the family.

DEAR MADAM, — You will kindly excuse dat I take the liberty to writh to you, but my clay was ready as far as I could do it last Fryday and it is so hard to keep it moist without spoiling it dat I dont know what to do. I fully understand dat Mr —— is verry bussy whit his work and so I dit not like to bodder him with my littel afairs.

So you would do me a great favor if you would find out when I could see him, if only 15 minutes. I faund it such a hard job to make the lykniss ennywhere near to south [suit] me, becous in my minds eye I had his picture . . . and the photograph dont souths [suit] me because it dont give him credit.

When I cam home from your house, I washet the littel catpiece whit soap and whater and it becum quit white and nice, so would yours, if you would just try.

I put one of my cards in for the adress in case you should be so kind to writh and oblige

Your respectfully.

For the literary man especially, the phrase "to writh" is clearly more vigorous and expressive than "to write," and often represents the same process; especially when the writer is painted at the very climax of toil, and is described as "verry bussy whit his work." What the "littel catpiece" was, is now lost to memory, but it is something to know that when "washet whit soap and whater" it "becum quit white and niece." Note throughout, also, the absence of all mere illiteracy in the spelling of this letter, a document which simply lies in some zone, halfway between some other language and our own, resulting in a consistent and uniform dialect, only half spoiled into English.

As a sample of a really vigorous, but somewhat untrained American mind, with its multitude of momentous things to be said and nothing longer than a possible sentence to say them in,—this letter from an unseen correspondent in a remote Western region will suffice. We may picture her as the kind and well-to-do adviser to her neighbors, who seek her in market wagons to inquire of her how to regain supposed bequests in far-off lands; even she being unable to find for them any refuge but in what she describes as "Carnage."

MY DEAR FRIEND, — This is all one letter, a part of the last, when I got to writing about that immaginary old gentleman, that would be to old to care anything about waiting if he was older than I am, I forgot what I wished to say and that is about English lawyers, do you know of one who could attend to some business for my neighbors, this place is out of the way we have no railroads and are not connected with the city only by market wagons, we do not know any thing here, I am the only one who has been abroad and they come to me for advice about their property who know nothing about lawyers. I have one a young man who manages my estate, and I told him to write for my neighbors to Mr B—— who is consul to Liverpool as I know his wife, and ask for a Lawyer for my neighbors who wish to get some money from the Bank of England, the Bank having written that it was left there by their grandfather for them. Mr. B—— wrote the name of a firm, and my lawyer wrote to them to see how much money there was in the bank for them as he did not think it could be as many millions as they thought, now the lawyer answered and said he had looked the chancery and there was no estate for the —— there, of course there was not, he was never told to look the chancery, what would you



think of a lawyer like that, you who are noted for knowledge ought to know, and then the Bank of England wrote to know the *title* of the old man who lived so long ago in this neighborhood, and then my young lawyer did not know what to do, and I thought of asking you for an English lawyer of sense. Some money in this neighborhood might get us a library for the High School. I have given the land and the house is built, these farmers ought to have a library, how could we get in touch with Carnage, or some other of that generous kind of people?

No really illiterate letters will ever be so dear to my heart, or even afford such suggestive studies as to the way in which written language first unfolds itself, as those received when I commanded a military camp of nearly a thousand freed slaves, nine tenths of whom were making their early efforts toward reading and writing. The simplicity and directness of their processes, the seeming hopelessness of the first results, the new suggestions conveyed as to phonetic methods of spelling, the absolute daring with which nouns and verbs were combined, made all mere public school instruction appear commonplace beside these. The writer of the following epistle, Baltimore



Chaplin, was one of those picturesque vagabonds who are to be found in all regiments, white or black, and who are apt to make themselves more interesting to their senior officers than those leading lives of more monotonous virtue. He had been, it would seem, arrested for some offense, and probably with undue violence. The letter was addressed to the commander of the Department, and I believe it soon turned out that the writer had been, for once, unjustly suspected, and must be set at liberty. As I recur to the epistle after nearly forty years have passed, there is a certain fascination in tracing the successive efforts to make the untutored pen express the untrained ear, thus giving forth sounds new in their combination and sometimes more expressive than tones achieved under the full rigors of grammar and dictionary. The wildness of all peril appears thus concentrated into the word "Somharme" and the refuge for all safety into the word "Gorhome;" while the union of these two words in one sentence seems to reach the acme of all desolation. I have ventured to elucidate the letter by translating phrases within brackets, wherever the unaided comprehension would seem hopeless, which is, indeed, quite often.

March 22 [1864].

DEAR GENRAL GILMOR I tak my [pen to] Root [write] you this to you And Do if you Plas [please] to Grant this Parden For me For God Sak Did not Now [know] that it Twas enen Harm for my Go home But I find that Twas Somharme For me to Gorhome But Do Genral Do If you Plas to Parden And forgiev me

For All that Pat [is put] agant me for God Sak Do if you Plas to Relefe Me for God Sak for I Went home And the Sen [they sent] After me And I Saw the Copprol When he Com And he told me that I is His Priner [Prisoner] And But ten Sake [seconds] from after I Semet [submit] to him as Privner he Shot Me Do if Ples [please] to Grant this for me

This is retted [written] By the hand of Baltimore Chaplin

Do by the mercy of god Grat [grant] this for Me Do Genral for God Sak To Parden And forgiev me.

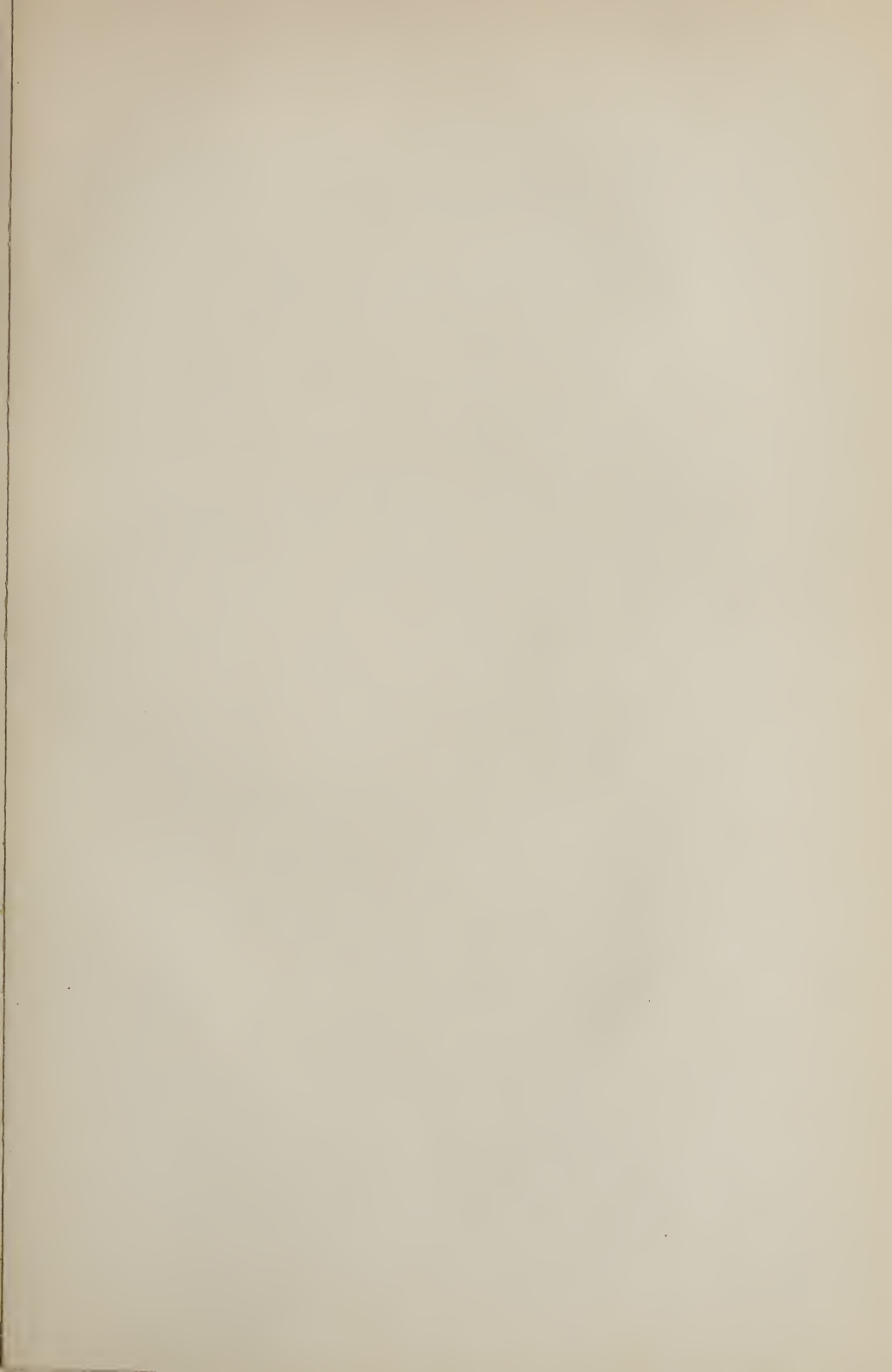
The path back to the accustomed orthography and grammar may perhaps best be traced by this letter, written by a man in the same regiment, of much higher quality, whose intellectual progress showed itself at this stage, as often happens, by an undue range of sonorous

words. I am sorry that the document does not contain his more accustomed signature, which was absolutely original and of the most dignified and even stately quality. Having been the very first colored soldier enlisted in the Civil War, he had created a title as genuine and imposing as that of any mediæval baron; and usually signed himself "William Brunson, 1st Sergeant, Co. A., 1st S. C. Vols.," to this adding, by his own invention, "A: 1, African Foundations." This is one of his letters: —

AT CAMP SAXTON Feb. 20th 63

MY DEAR COLONEL I hav inform in here About so doing: According to the different in rule in wish how: I stand now: for I dont know if it is Right for me to hav one of the Armies Regulation Books: so sir that is the reason I had come to you to know: and if you think that it is right for me to have one I Like to have one: if it cost me one Month wages: for I Am withness [witness] that it will in Prove [improve] and give me A withness: in so doing: it from sergt Wm Brunson Co A.

If to his function of literary man, poor but patient, an author adds that of being constantly confounded with a relative who is always originating large enterprises and backing them up

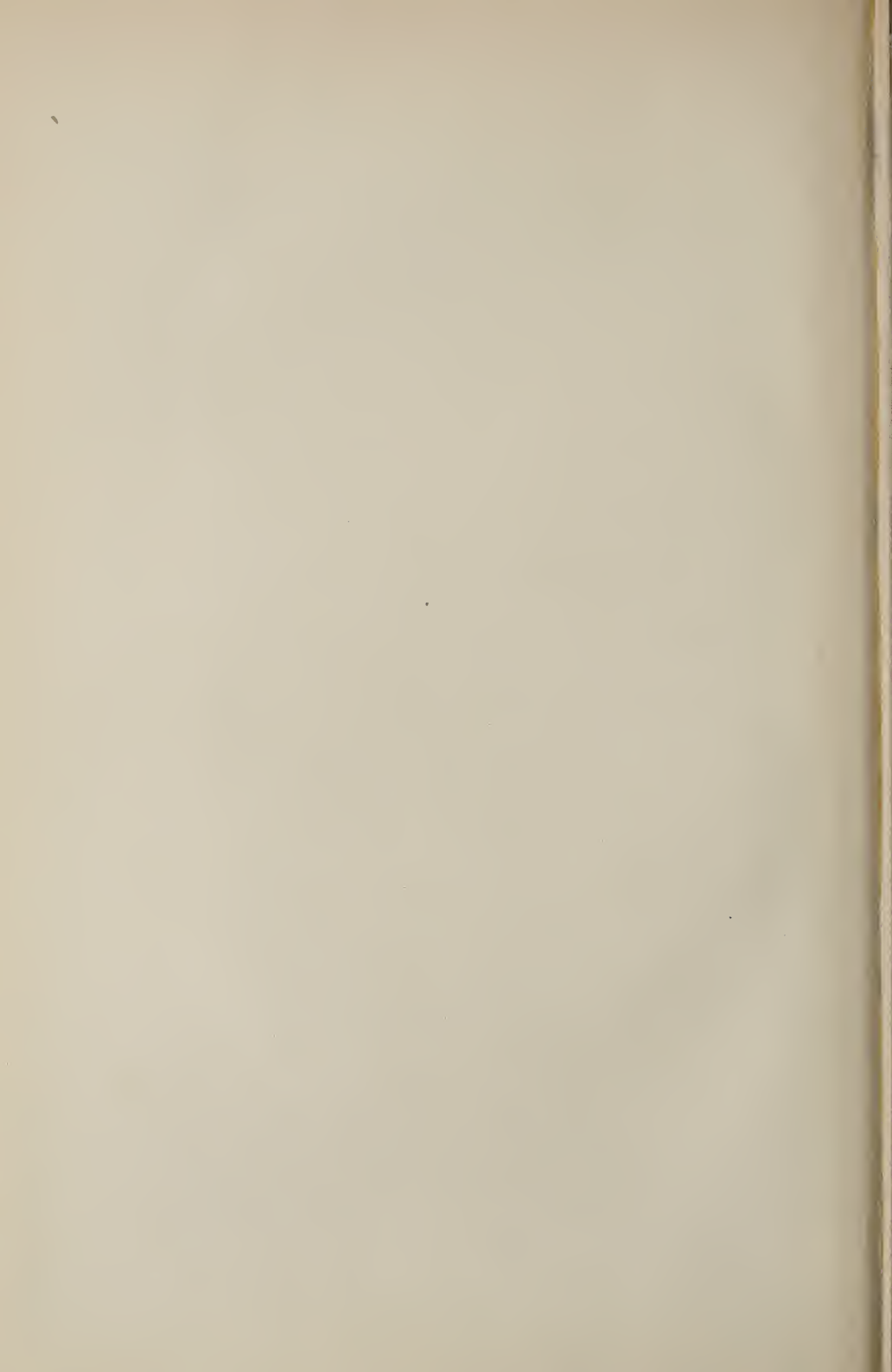


at Camp Daxton Feb 20  
my dear Col. I have  
doing; according to the  
how; I stand now; for  
Right for me to have  
Regulation Books; so I  
had come to you to  
that it is right for  
Like to have one; if I  
wages; for I Am without  
and give me a with  
sergt Wm Brunson

63

inform in here about so  
liberent in Kule in wish  
dont know if it is  
one of the Armies  
that is the reason I  
know: and if you think  
me to have one I  
cost me one month  
so that it will in Prove  
ess: in so doing it from  
Co A





munificently, he is liable to receive such letters as the following, which came several years since through the post-office from Poonah, India. This letter was addressed in a handwriting which had, so to say, an Arabic flavor, and the address ran thus: "—— Hinginston, the great lord of Boston, Boston through Italy." Straying into the Cambridge post-office, it was handed to me, and no stretch of humility could be expected to preclude me from the privilege of opening it. The letter itself was very long, and after describing business calamities, the death of a wife, etc., it thus goes on:—

" To my great misfortune this generous uncle died Since a month and my aunt soon urges me to take away my family. This is a great difficulty I ever experienced. Money requires to settle my house again, which I have none. I asked the protection of many great men of my own cast as well as Europions, but to my evil star they all have closed their ears against me. I had heard much about the kind and generous feelings of your Americans & I have read one fresh example of your own generosity & I beg from you a protection of £50 fifty to enable me to bring my family here & commence busyness honestly. Will it please God to raise me up again and make me prosperous, I will return your amount honestly, otherwise only

gratify myself by ever remembering your kind generosity and pray God to grant you a long life and prosperity. Wishing you all the worldly blessings

remain

Honored Sir,

Your most

Servant."

To my perhaps too hardened ears, the gem of this whole letter is unquestionably to be found in the word "otherwise," which occurs near the close. Never before, I think, was it my lot to read a letter asking for a loan of money and intimating one instant's doubt as to the repayment. If there is a point at which hope springs eternal in the breast of the most lagging debtor, it is this. Had I vast sums in my pocket, yearning to be lent, I think that the recipient whom I should prefer to all others would be the man who had the stern integrity to hint at one atom of uncertainty as to my seeing my money again.

## VIII

### BOOKS UNREAD

“Μηκέτι πλανῶ· οὔτε γὰρ τὰ ὑπομνημάτια σοῦ μέλλεις ἀναγινώσκειν οὔτε τὰς ἀρχαίων Ῥωμαίων καὶ Ἑλλήνων πράξεις, καὶ τὰς ἐκ τῶν συγγραμμάτων ἐκλογάς, ὅς εἰς τὸ γήρας σταντῶ ἀπετίθεσο.” — MARCUS ANTONINUS, iii, 14.

“No longer delude thyself; for thou wilt never read thine own memoranda, nor the recorded deeds of old Romans and Greeks, and those passages in books which thou hast been reserving for thine old age.”

**I**N the gradual growth of every student's library, he may or may not continue to admit literary friends and advisers; but he will be sure, sooner or later, to send for a man with a tool-chest. Sooner or later, every nook and corner will be filled with books, every window will be more or less darkened, and added shelves must be devised. He may find it hard to achieve just the arrangement he wants, but he will find it hardest of all to meet squarely that inevitable inquiry of the puzzled carpenter, as he looks about him, “Have you really read all these books?” The expected answer is, “To be sure, how can you doubt it?” Yet if you asked him in turn, “Have you actually used every tool in your tool-chest?” you would

very likely be told, "Not one half as yet, at least this season; I have the others by me, to use as I need them." Now if this reply can be fairly made in a simple, well-defined, distinctly limited occupation like that of a joiner, how much more inevitable it is in a pursuit which covers the whole range of thought and all the facts in the universe. The library is the author's tool-chest. He must at least learn, as he grows older, to take what he wants and to leave the rest.

This never was more tersely expressed than by Margaret Fuller when she says, "A man who means to think and write a great deal must, after six and twenty, learn to read with his fingers." A few men of leisure may satisfy themselves by reading over and over a single volume and ignoring all others, like that English scholar who read Homer's *Iliad* and *Odyssey* every year in the original, devoting a week to each book, and reserving the minor poems for his summer vacation. Nay, there are books in the English language so vast that the ordinary reader recoils before their text and their footnotes. Such, for instance, is Gibbon's "*Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*," containing substantially the history of the whole world for thirteen centuries. When that author dismissed the last page of his task, on

June 27, 1787, in the historic garden at Geneva, having arranged that it was to appear before the public at once in four different languages, is it not possible that he may have felt some natural misgiving as to whether any one person would ever read the whole of it? We know him to have predicted that Fielding's "Tom Jones" would outlast the palace of the Escorial and the imperial eagle of Austria, but he recorded no similar claim for his own work. The statesman, Fox, to be sure, pronounced the book to be "immortal," simply because, as he said, no man in the world could do without it; and Sheridan added, with undue levity, that if not luminous, it was at least voluminous. But modern readers, as a rule, consult it, they do not read it. It is, at best, a tool-chest.

Yet there lies before me what is, perhaps, the most remarkable manuscript catalogue of books read that can be found in the English-speaking world, this being the work of a man of eighty-three, who began life by reading a verse of the Bible aloud to his mother when three years old, had gone through the whole of it by the time he was nine, and then went on to grapple with all the rest of literature, upon which he is still at work. His vast catalogue of books read begins with 1837, and continues up to the present day, thus covering



much more than half a century, a course of reading not yet finished, and in which Gibbon is but an incident. One finds, for instance, at intervals, such items as these: "Gibbon's 'Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire,' read twice between 1856 and 1894;" "Gibbon's 'Decline and Fall,' third reading, 1895;" "Gibbon's 'Decline and Fall,' vols. 1 and 2, fourth reading;" followed soon after by "Gibbon, vols. 3-6, fourth reading;" "Gibbon, vols. 7-8, fourth reading." What are a thousand readings of "Tom Jones" compared with a series of feats like this? And there is a certain satisfaction to those who find themselves staggered by the contemplation of such labor, when they read elsewhere on the list the recorded confession that this man of wonderful toil occasionally stooped so far as cheerfully to include "That Frenchman" and "Mr. Barnes of New York."

The list of books unread might properly begin with those painted shelves of mere book covers, which present themselves in some large libraries, to veil the passageway. These are not books unread, since they are not books at all. Much the same is true of those which perhaps may still be seen, as formerly, in old Dutch houses round Albany: the effigies of books merely desired, but not yet possessed; and only proposed as purchases for some day

when the owner's ship should come in. These were made only of blocks of wood, neatly painted and bound in leather with the proper labels, but surely destined never to be read, since they had in them nothing readable. Almost as remote from the real books are those dummies made up by booksellers to be exhibited by their traveling agents. Thus I have at hand a volume of my own translation of Epictetus, consisting of a single "signature" of eighteen pages, repeated over and over, so that one never gets any farther: each signature bearing on the last page, by one of Fate's simple and unconscious strokes, the printed question, "Where is progress, then?" (page 18). Where, indeed! Next to these, of course, the books which go most thoroughly unread are those which certainly are books, but of which we explore the backs only, as in fine old European libraries; books as sacredly preserved as was once that library at Blenheim,—now long since dispersed,—in which, when I idly asked the custodian whether she did not find it a great deal of trouble to keep them dusted, she answered with surprise, "No, sir, the doors have not been unlocked for ten years." It is so in some departments of even American libraries.

Matthew Arnold once replied to a critic who accused him of a lack of learning that the charge

was true, but that he often wished he had still less of that possession, so hard did he find it to carry lightly what he knew. The only knowledge that involves no burden is found, it may be justly claimed, in the books that are left unread. I mean those which remain undisturbed, long and perhaps forever, on a student's bookshelves; books for which he possibly economized, and to obtain which he went without his dinner; books on whose backs his eyes have rested a thousand times, tenderly and almost lovingly, until he has perhaps forgotten the very language in which they are written. He has never read them, yet during these years there has never been a day when he would have sold them; they are a part of his youth. In dreams he turns to them; in dreams he reads Hebrew again; he knows what a Differential Equation is; "how happy could he be with either." He awakens, and whole shelves of his library are, as it were, like fair maidens who smiled on him in their youth but once, and then passed away. Under different circumstances, who knows but one of them might have been his? As it is, they have grown old apart from him; yet for him they retain their charms. He meets them as the ever delightful but now half-forgotten poet Præd meets his "Belle of the Ball-Room" in later years: —

---

“For in my heart’s most secret cell  
There had been many other lodgers ;  
And she was not the ball-room’s belle,  
But only Mrs. Something Rogers.”

So in my case, my neighbors at the Harvard Observatory have solved the differential equations; my other neighbors, the priests, have read — let us hope — the Hebrew psalms; but I live to ponder on the books unread.

This volume of Hirsch’s Algebra, for instance, takes me back to a happy period when I felt the charm given to mathematics by the elder Peirce, and might easily have been won to devote my life to them, had casual tutorships been tossed about so freely as now. No books retain their attraction when reopened, I think, as much as the mathematical; the quaint formulæ seeming like fascinating recluses with cowed heads. A mere foreign language, even if half forgotten, is something that can be revived again. It is simply another country of the world, and you can revisit it at will; but mathematics is another world. To reënter it would be to leave common life behind, and yet it seems so attractive that even to sit down and calculate a table of logarithms would appear tempting. The fact of dwelling near an observatory, as I do, might seem to nourish this illusion, yet I have never encountered any pursuit,

not even astronomy, which does not leave its votaries still, by their own confession, held within the limitations of mortal men.

Many books go unread in our libraries because prized for their associations only. There is, for instance, yonder set of Fourier in five volumes. I have read them little, but they are full of manuscript notes in the fine Italian hand of the dear friend to whom I loaned them in our days at the University. His life and career have ever been a note of sadness in those early memories, but when I open the books he comes before me in all his youthful charm. There is Fourier's portrait, still noble and impressive as when I pasted it in the first volume; nothing in his books ever equaled it, yet its expression is as hard to read as were his books. How much of that period they all represent! and each time I open them, the face of Fourier seems to fade away, and there is the shadowy impression of that of my friend, just receding at the open door.

The same illusion extends also to all one's shelves of Greek and Latin authors; they reproduce their associations. We chant with Pindar, sing with Catullus, without taking a book from its place. Yonder series of volumes of Æschylus, with his commentators, holds the eye with charm and reverence; I rarely open



any one of them except that which contains the "Agamemnon;" and that most often to verify some re-reading of FitzGerald's wonderful translation; the only version from the Greek, so far as I know, in which the original text is bettered, and one in which the translator has moreover put whole passages of his own, that fitly match the original. Yet he wrote in a letter which lies before me, "I am yet not astonished (at my all but seventy years of age) with the credit given me for so far succeeding in reproducing other men's thoughts, *which is all I have tried to do.* [Italics my own.] I know yet many others would have done as well, and any Poet better." And again, on those other shelves are sixteen volumes relating to Aristophanes, of which only three contain the originals, and all the rest hold only commentaries or translations, exhibiting the works of the one light or joyous brain which ancient Greece produced; a poet who was able to balance all the tragedians by the grace and charm of his often translated but never reproduced comedy of "The Birds."

Books which we have first read in odd places always retain their charm, whether read or neglected. Thus Hazlitt always remembered that it was on the 10th of April, 1798, that he "sat down to a volume of the 'New



Éloise' at the Inn at Llangollen over a bottle of sherry and a cold chicken." In the same way I remember how Professor Longfellow in college recommended to us, for forming a good French style, to read Balzac's "Peau de Chagrin;" and yet it was a dozen years later before I found it in a country inn, on a lecture trip, and sat up half the night to read it. It may be, on the other hand, that such haphazard meetings with books sometimes present them under conditions hopelessly unfavorable, as when I encountered Whitman's "Leaves of Grass" for the first time on my first voyage in an Azorian barque; and it inspires to this day a slight sense of nausea, which it might, after all, have inspired equally on land.

Some of my own books, probably the most battered and timeworn, have recalled for nearly half a century the associations of camp life during the Civil War. They represent the few chosen or more likely accidental volumes that stood against the wall in the primitive little shelves at some picket station. A part of them survived to be brought home again: the small Horace; the thin volume containing that unsurpassed book of terse nobleness, Sir Thomas Browne's "Christian Morals;" the new translation of Jean Paul's "Titan" just then published, sent from home by a zealous friend, and

Wendbury: June 14/97

My dear Sir -

Thank you for "Kation". And  
I return you, as you desire: sooner  
than I sh<sup>d</sup>. So were it not for some  
one (I know not who) had sent it to  
me before. So I have had ample time  
to digest myself. Perhaps I ought not to  
acknowledge yet I think it just, <sup>the Reviewer</sup> saying  
yet it's price is much our weight it's blame,  
but I do think so, nevertheless; I am yet  
not intoxicated (I may all but 40 years of  
age) with French given me for so for  
succeeding in C. Keating's <sup>two men's</sup>  
Thoughts; which is all I have tried to do  
I know yet many others <sup>no</sup> have done

as well - and my Poet little - had given  
as much Leisure, & Inclination, for such  
works as I have had.

I have also seen Atlantic, w<sup>ch</sup> I  
have taken out for two years on account  
of my friend Mr. Kemble's "Gofsch"  
which I am sorry to find is dis-  
continued since she has returned to  
England

I believe it is from no personal  
prejudice yet I think American Reviews  
of English Books are apt to be juster  
than English of English. The Critics are  
removed from Authors, yet criticize;  
from Clarks, & Clerics, Editors, who  
are for them - or against; & so can

judge which is better: it is some possible  
structure. 5. I mention it to me  
Country folks are - ceteris paribus -  
better <sup>judges</sup> than I am; for some seasons  
I got Mr. Wilson (Ch. Porter) said Tom  
of Scotch origin to Mr. Miller. "The  
opinion of our quiet, intelligent  
Country Person was worth you all he  
said."

My Keweenaw, such as they were,  
were <sup>originally</sup> all ~~some~~ primitive friends to  
give to Friends. & have now been  
found to be not so. I  
mean one of the & their Agamemnon-  
letter of whom remains to be shown  
away, or broken one, by our other  
-names, & Ankenie, I don't say. I

have never sent a Copy to any of  
my Friends as I have others to send  
to Mr. & Mrs. American Gentleman  
who had an interest in Boston The  
Peace they are published at - not very  
long - price perhaps only a small Sale  
it seems to me particularly high; At which  
only mean "Will you have one?" I  
rather like it, as you have been printed  
Enough to send me its Praises from  
among my Patrons in America &c.

Yours truly  
E. D. D.

P.S. I rec. post of Paper in favor  
to come in, so as to make sure of  
its funding you as clean as it left.



handed from tent to tent for reading in the long summer afternoons; books interrupted by the bugle and then begun again. They were perhaps read and re-read, or perhaps never even opened; they may never have been opened since; but they now seem like silent members of the Loyal Legion or the Grand Army of the Republic. I may or may not care much for the individual men as they are, but they represent what was and what might have been; and it is the same with the books. The same mixture of feelings applies to certain French or German books bought in the lands where they were printed, or even imported thence, or from old bookstores in London. No matter; their land is the world of literature; their mere presence imparts a feeling like that which Charles Lamb applies to himself in the cloisters at Oxford, which he had visited only during the weeks of vacation: "In graver moods, I proceed Master of Arts."

The books most loved of all in a student's library are perhaps those which first awakened his literary enthusiasm, and which are so long since superseded by other and possibly better books that he leaves them unread and yet cannot part with them; books which even now open of themselves at certain favorite passages, having a charm that can never be



communicated to a more recent reader. Remembering, as I do, the first books which created in America the long period of zeal for German literature which has now seemingly spent itself, I can turn to them with ever fresh delight, although I may rarely open them. Such, for instance, are Heine's "Letters on German Literature," translated by G. W. Haven in this country in 1836, and Mrs. Austin's "Characteristics of Goethe," largely founded on Falk's recollections, and published in 1841. A passage in this last book which always charmed me was that which described how the heroes of German literature—Goethe, Herder, Wieland, and Gleim—went out with the Court into the forests where Goethe's gypsy songs were written; and another passage where it says, "At the hermitage, where a visit from a wandering stag is not uncommon, and where the forester watches the game by the light of the autumnal moon, a majestic tree is yet standing, on which, inscribed as in a living album, the names of Herder, Gleim, Lavater, Wieland, and Goethe, are still distinctly legible." How many vows I made in youth to visit that little hermitage built of trunks of trees and covered with moss, on whose walls Goethe had written the slumber song of summer:—

---

“Ueber allen Gipfeln  
Ist Ruh,  
In allen Wipfeln  
Spürest du  
Kaum einen Hauch ;  
Die Vögelein schweigen im Walde.  
Warte nur, balde  
Ruhest du auch.”

Thus much for Goethe's "Characteristics." I fear that my boyish copy of Heine opens of itself at the immortal compliment given by the violin player Solomons to George III of England, then his pupil: "Violin players are divided into three classes: to the first belong those who cannot play at all; to the second belong those who play very miserably; and to the third, those who play finely; Your Majesty has already elevated yourself to the rank of the second class." Tried by such a classification, Heine certainly ranks in the third class, not the second; yet strange it is that, of the two German authors who bid fair to live longest on the road to immortality, the one, Goethe, should be the most absolutely German among them all, while Heine died in heart, as in residence, a Frenchman.

But there are other books, perhaps inherited or bought in a deluded hour, that have no page at which they open of themselves through mere habit. "What actual benefits

do we reap," asks Hazlitt, "from the writings of a Laud, or a Whitgift, or a Bishop Bull, or a Bishop Waterland, or Prideaux's 'Connections,' or Beausobre, or St. Augustine, or of Pufendorf, or of Vattel?" Take from this list St. Augustine, and I could indorse it; but his "Confessions" I think will forever remain fascinating because they are profoundly human, though one cannot easily read more than half a dozen pages at a time. He makes revelations which are in depth of feeling, when compared to the far-famed "Confessions of Rousseau," as "Hamlet" to "Love's Labour's Lost." I refer especially, in case we must read the book in English, to a fine anonymous fragmentary translation, far superior to Pusey's, and edited by Miss Elizabeth P. Peabody in Boston, sixty years ago. Upon what superb sentences does one open in this version: "How deep are Thy ways, O God, Thou only great, that sittest silent on high and by an unwearied law dispensing penal blindness to lawless desires!" How this thought of penal blindness haunted the author! and who ever penetrated the desultory tragedies of too ardent youth like Augustine? "Thy wrath had gathered over me, and I knew it not. I was grown deaf by the clanking of the chain of my mortality, the punishment of the pride of my soul, and I strayed further

from Thee, and Thou lettest me alone, and I was tossed about, and wasted, and dissipated, and I boiled over in my fornications, and Thou heldest Thy peace, O Thou my tardy joy! Thou then heldest Thy peace, and I wandered further and further from Thee, into more and more fruitless seed-plots of sorrow, and a proud dejectedness, and a restless weariness." What trenchant phrases are these! — and what self-analysis in such revelations as this: "What is worthy of blame but Vice? But I made myself worse than I was, that I might not be dispraised; and when in anything I had not sinned like the abandoned ones, I would say that I had done what I had not done, that I might not seem contemptible in proportion as I was innocent; or of less account, the more chaste."

Who can wonder that the heretical Pope, Clement XIV (Ganganelli), wrote, "Take care to procure the 'Confessions' of St. Augustine, a book written with his tears"? or who can be surprised that a certain Bishop said to Augustine's mother, when she reproached him for not watching and questioning her son incessantly, "Go thy ways and God bless thee, for it is not possible that the son of these tears should perish"? Most important of all, and a passage which I, for one, would gladly see

engrossed on parchment and hung above the desk of every teacher of elocution in America, is the following:—

“Behold, O Lord God, yea, behold patiently, as Thou art wont, how carefully the sons of men observe the covenanted rules of letters and syllables that those who spake before them used, neglecting the eternal covenant of everlasting salvation received from Thee. Inasmuch, that a teacher or learner of the hereditary laws of pronunciation will more offend men, by speaking without the aspirate, of a ‘*uman* being,’ in despite of the laws of grammar, than if he, a ‘human being,’ hate a ‘human being’ in despite of Thee. . . . In quest of the fame of eloquence, a man standing before a human judge, surrounded by a human throng, declaiming against his enemy with fiercest hatred, will take heed most watchfully, lest, by an error of the tongue, he murder the word ‘human-being;’ but takes no heed, lest, through the malice of his heart, he murder the real human being.”

There are many books which, although left unread, are to be valued for single sentences only, to be found here and there. Others are prized for the picturesque manner in which their quarto or folio pages are filled with capital or italic letters, or even for the superb and



daring eccentricity of their title-pages alone. I have volumes of Jacob Behmen where each detached line of the title-page has something quaint and picturesque in it, and a dozen different fonts of type are drawn upon to conduct the reader through their mazes, as for instance in this :—

“ Aurora.  
 That is, the  
 Day-Spring.  
 Or  
 Dawning of the Day in the Orient  
 Or  
 Morning-Rednesse  
 in the Rising of the  
 Sun.  
 That is  
 The Root or Mother of  
 Philosophie, Astrologie & Theologie  
 from the true Ground.  
 Or  
 A Description of Nature.  
 All this set down diligently from a true  
 Ground in the Knowledge of the  
 Spirit, and in the impulse of God,  
 By  
 Jacob Behme  
 Teutonick Philosopher.  
 Being his First Book.  
 Written in Gerlitz in Germany Anno  
 Christi M. DC. XII. on Tuesday after  
 the Day of Pentecost or Whitsunday  
 Ætatis suæ 37.



London, Printed by John Streater, for  
Giles [*sic*] Calvert, and are be sold at  
his Shop at the Black-spread-Eagle at  
the West-End of Pauls, 1656."

Could I represent this title-page by photography as it is, you would see "Day-Spring" in lower-case letters; but in the largest type of all, as if leading a flight, the "Morning-Rednesse" in broad snailing German text; the "Dawning of the Day in the Orient" in a long italic line which suggests the very expansion of the light; and the "Sun" in the very centre of the page, as if all else were concentrated there; the word itself being made still terser, if possible, by the old-fashioned spelling, since it reads briefly "SVN."

Or consider such a magnificent hurling together of stately and solemn words as this; the whole Judgment Day of the Universe, as it were, brought together into a title-page:—

" Signatura Rerum :  
or the  
Signature of all Things :  
shewing  
The Sign, and Signification of the severall  
Forms and Shapes in the  
Creation :  
And what the  
Beginning, Ruin, and Cure of every

---

Thing is; it proceeds out of Eternity  
into Time,  
and again out of Time into Eternity,  
and comp-  
rizeth All Mysteries.

Written in High Dutch, MDCXXII.

By Jacob Behmen,  
aliàs

Teutonicus Phylosophus.

London,

Printed by John Macock, for Gyles Cal-  
vert, at the black spread

Eagle, at the West end of Pauls Church,

1651."

Here again the words "Beginning, Ruin, and Cure" are given in large italic letters, and I never open the book without a renewed sensation of awe, very much as if I were standing beside that gulf which yawned at Lisbon in 1755, and had seen those 30,000 human beings swallowed up before my eyes.

We do not sufficiently appreciate, in modern books, the condensed and at least readable title-pages which stand sentinel, as it were, at their beginning. We forget how much more easily the books of two centuries ago were left unread, inasmuch as the title-page was apt to be in itself as long as a book. Take, for instance, this quaint work, not to be found in Allibone's Dictionary of Authors, but owing its authorship to "J. Bland, Professor of Phy-

sic," who published in 1773, at London, "An Essay in Praise of Women; or a Looking Glass for Ladies to see their Perfections in with Observations how the Godhead seemed concerned in their Creation; what Respect is due to them on that Account; how they have behaved in all Ages and especially in our Saviour's Time." Thus begins the title-page, which is as long as an ordinary chapter, and closes thus: "Also Observations and Reflections in Defense against base and satirical Authors, proving them not only erroneous and diabolical but repugnant to Holy Scripture. The Whole being a Composition of Wit and Humor, Morality and Divinity fit to be perused by all the curious and ingenious, especially the Ladies." After this title-page, it is asking too much of any one to read the book, unless it be to study the manner in which the tea-table, now held so innocent, had, in 1733, such associations of luxury and extravagance that Professor J. Bland is compelled to implore husbands not to find fault with it. "More harmless liquor could never be invented than the ladies in this age have made choice of. What is so pleasant and grateful to the taste as a dish of tea, sweetened with fine loaf sugar? What more innocent banquet could have ever been in use than this? and what more becoming conversa-

tion than the inoffensive, sweet and melodious expressions of the fair ones over an entertainment so much like themselves?"

Or let us turn to one of the early American books, "The Columbian Muse, a Selection of American Poetry from various Authors of Established Reputation. Published in New York in 1794." The most patriotic American could not now read it with patience, yet the most unpatriotic cannot deny its quaint and fervent flavor. It is full of verses on the President's birthday and the genius of America; and of separate odes on American sages, American poets, and American painters. The monotonous couplets, the resounding adjectives, the personifications, the exclamation points, all belong to their period, the time when "Inoculation, heavenly maid" was deemed an appropriate opening for an ode. The very love poetry was patriotic and bore the title "On Love and the American Fair," by Colonel Humphreys, who also contributes a discourse on "The Future State," which turns out to refer to "Western Territory." Aside from the semi-political allusions there is no local coloring whatever, except that Richard Alsop, in an elegy written in February, 1791, gives the very first instance, so far as I know, of an allusion in verse to any flower distinctively American:—

“There the Wild-Rose in earliest pride shall bloom,  
 There the Magnolia's gorgeous flowers unfold,  
 The purple Violet shed its sweet perfume :  
 And beauteous Meadia wave her plumes of gold.”

This last plant, though not here accurately described, must evidently have been the *Dodecatheon Meadia*, or “Shooting Star.” This is really the highest point of Americanism attained in the dingy little volume; the low-water mark being clearly found when we read in the same volume the work of a poet then known as “W. M. Smith, Esq.,” who could thus appeal to American farmers to celebrate a birthday:—

“Shepherds, then, the chorus join,  
 Haste the festive wreath to twine :  
 Come with bosoms all sincere,  
 Come with breasts devoid of care ;  
 Bring the pipe and merry lay,  
 'Tis Eliza's natal day.”

Wordsworth says in his “Personal Talk,”—

“Dreams, books are each a world ;”

and the books unread mingle with the dreams and unite the charm of both. This applies, especially, I think, to books of travel; we buy them, finding their attractions strong, but somehow we do not read them over and over, unless they prove to be such books as those



of Urquhart, — the “ Pillars of Hercules ” especially, where the wealth of learning and originality is so great that we seem in a different region of the globe on every page. One of the most poetic things about Whittier’s temperament lay in this fact, that he felt most eager to visit each foreign country before he had read any book about it. After reading, the dream was half fulfilled, and he turned to something else, so that he died without visiting any foreign country. But the very possession of such books, and their presence on the shelves, carries one to the Arctic regions or to the Indian Ocean. No single book of travels in Oceanica, it may be, will last so long as that one stanza in Whittier’s “ The Eternal Goodness, ” —

“ I know not where His islands lift  
Their fronded palms in air ;  
I only know, I cannot drift  
Beyond His love and care.”

How often have I known that poem to be recited by those who did not even know the meaning of the word “ fronded ” ! It is the poet, not the explorer or the geographer, who makes the whole round world his own.

“ After all, ” as the brilliant and melancholy Rufus Choate said, “ a book is the only immortality ; ” and sometimes when a book is attacked and even denounced, its destiny of



fame is only confirmed. Thus the vivacious and cheery Pope, Pio Nono, when asked by a too daring author to help on his latest publication, suggested that he could only aid it by putting it in the Index Expurgatorius. Yet if a book is to be left unread at last, the fault must ultimately rest on the author, even as the brilliant Lady Eastlake complained, when she wrote of modern English novelists, "Things are written now to be read once, and no more; that is, they are read as often as they deserve. A book in old times took five years to write and was read five hundred times by five hundred people. Now it is written in three months, and read once by five hundred thousand people. That's the proper proportion."

## IX

### BUTTERFLIES IN POETRY

IT was one of the proudest moments of my college life when I was deputed by Dr. Harris—the foremost naturalist then to be found in Harvard University, if not in the nation—to report upon the credentials of a foreign prince, and, if these proved authentic, to introduce him to academical society. That prince was and is—for his posterity still remain among us—the most superb among such potentates who had ever visited this region; for he was the *Papilio philenor* (now *Laertias philenor*), a tropical butterfly then first seen in Cambridge, and the largest ever found so far north, in America, bringing, moreover, an unwonted luxuriance in form and color. This butterfly was personally reared by Dr. Harris from a caterpillar found on a tropical plant at the Cambridge Botanic Garden; and its posterity may well be called “large and magnificent” by Mr. Samuel H. Scudder, the present successor of Dr. Harris as dean of American entomology. It is akin to the great

butterflies of the East Indies or of South America; its color is a deep purple, with glossy tints of green and steel-color, and large greenish spots passing into straw-color and orange. Such was the eminent foreigner arriving at Cambridge, in temporary disguise, in July, 1840, but destined to be the parent of a race now permanently acclimated there, and spread in a similar manner from the Atlantic to the Pacific. This gorgeous visitant I had the honor to receive; and I wrote thereon a report which may still perhaps survive among the documents of the Harvard Natural History Society.

In looking through an outdoor notebook of twenty years later, I find that I was at that period reintroduced to my early prince.

“July 3 [1861].— The eternal youthfulness of Nature answers to my own feeling of youth and preserves it. As I turn from these men and women around me, whom I watch gradually submerged under the tide of gray hairs — it seems a bliss I have never earned, to find bird, insect and flower renewing itself each year in fresh eternal beauty, the same as in my earliest childhood. The little red butterflies have not changed a streak of black on their busy wings, nor the azure dragonflies lost or gained a shade of color, since we Cam-

bridge children caught them in our childish hands. Yesterday by a lonely oak grove there fluttered out a great purple butterfly, almost fresh from the chrysalis, and alighted just before me, waving its lustrous wings. It was the beautiful *Papilio philenor*, which Dr. Harris showed us in college, as having just been found, an entire novelty, in the Botanic Garden. I had not seen it for twenty years, and here it was, the same brilliant tropical creature, propagated through a series of unwatched generations, perhaps unnoticed till it reached this lonely grove. With a collector's instinct I put my hat over it, but it got away and I was hardly sorry. It had come to link me with those vanished years."

Looking back on those early days, it would seem that the butterfly world might have drawn from my banished prince something of its peculiar charm. Certainly this winged race has long been familiar with royal family titles; at least, ever since Linnæus drew its scientific names from the Greek mythology, and later European entomologists from the Scandinavian, and our own native naturalists from the American Indian. Even these names are constantly changing, with new subdivisions and shifting connections; while the simpler English word, drawn obviously, like "butterfly," from the

yellow colors predominating in the meadows at midsummer, has yet been brought under a new interpretation, since a poet's daughter, Sarah Coleridge, stoutly maintains that the word simply originated in the phrase "better fly."

After all, the chief charm of this race of winged flowers does not lie in their varied and brilliant beauty, nor yet in their wonderful series of transformations, — their long and sordid caterpillar life, their long slumber in the chrysalis, or the very brief period which comprises their beauty, their love-making, their parentage, and their death. Nor does it lie in the fact that we do not yet certainly know whether they have in the caterpillar shape the faculty of sight, or not, and do not even know the precise use of their most conspicuous organ in maturity, the antennæ. Nor does it consist in this, that they of all created things have furnished man with the symbol of his own immortality. It rather lies in the fact that, with all their varied life and activity, they represent an absolutely silent existence.

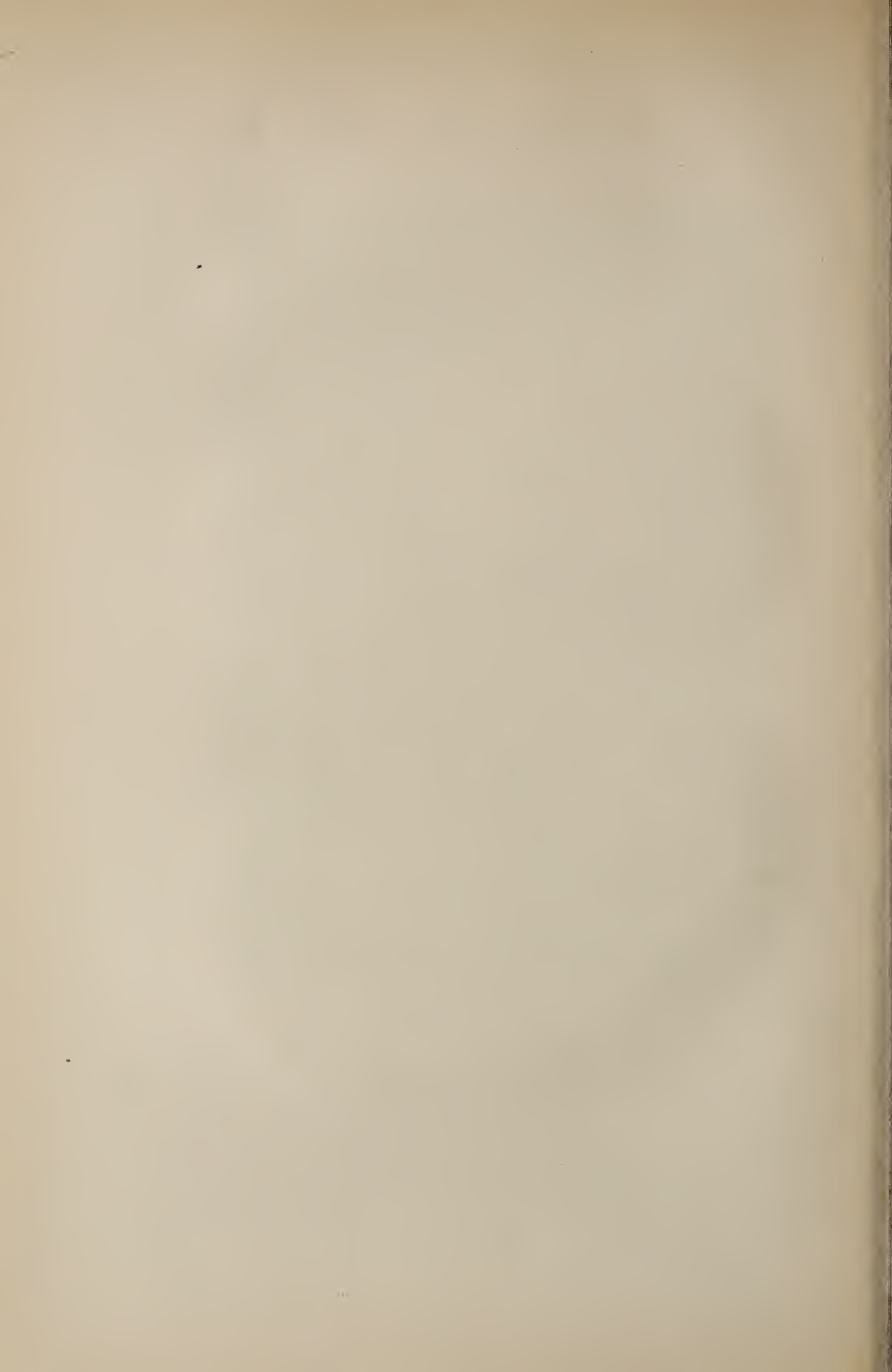
Victor Hugo has indeed somewhere pronounced the whole insect world to be, with hardly an exception, a world of silence. We feel, he says, as if life involved noise, but the most multitudinous portion of the race of liv-





VICTOR HUGO





ing things — fishes and insects — is almost absolutely still. The few that buzz or murmur are as nothing compared to the vast majority which are born and die soundless. If this be true of insects as a whole, it is of butterflies that it is eminently truest. All the vast array of modern knowledge has found no butterfly which murmurs with an audible voice, and only a very few species which can even audibly click or rustle with their wings; Darwin first observing these in South America, and others recording them at long intervals of years in Europe, and, finally, in the United States. Mr. Scudder has not only detected a soft sound in one or two cases, proceeding from the wings, and sounding like the faint rustling of sandpaper, but he hazards the opinion that many of the quivering or waving motions of the wings of these bright creatures, although inaudible to us, may be accompanied by sounds which the butterflies themselves or their kindred might hear.

If they can be thus heard without sound, why do we not at least hear more of them by fame in literature? They contribute much of the summer grace of the universe: they are of all beings the most picturesque in their lives, having three different phases of existence, each peculiar, and all frequently gorgeous, — the caterpillar, the chrysalis, and the imago, or fully

developed creature. They are unquestionably more numerous and more varied than birds, — the number of species far larger, and the swarms incomparably greater, where swarming is their practice; when they enter poetry, they do it with yet more grace; but fewer authors describe them, and those few more charily. Thoreau, for instance, rarely mentions them, and in some ways seems singularly ignorant of them. Thus in his MS. diary (1853-54, page 395) he describes himself as bringing home from the marshy meadows the great paper cocoon of the gray sphinx moth (*Attacus cecropia*), and as carrying it unrecognized to Dr. Harris, to learn about it, — an object which every schoolboy knows, one would suppose, and which is at least of close kindred to the butterflies.

The butterflies being thus silent, it is not, perhaps, strange that we do not interpret them better, but that each observer makes his own interpretation, or his own sympathetic response, varying, it may be, from any other. Thus Austin Dobson, writing poetry on a fan that had belonged to the Marquise de Pompadour, sees delineated upon it, "Courtiers as butterflies bright;" while Bryant in his "June" finds the creatures quite too indolent to be approved as courtiers: —

“ The idle butterfly  
Should rest him there.”

Edmund Gosse, meanwhile, sees in their mien, as he watches them resting in the grass, no trace of idleness, but rather the fatigue due to arduous labor: —

“ The weary butterflies that droop their wings.”

Percy Mackaye in his blithe book, “ The Canterbury Pilgrims,” complicates the matter by obliging the butterfly to keep off the attentions of the moth-miller: —

“ Mealy miller, moth-miller,  
Fly away!  
If Dame Butterfly doth say thee nay,  
Go and court a caterpillar !”

And Keats, always the closest of observers, acquits his winged creatures of all care when he says of Endymion, —

“ His eyelids  
Widened a little, as when Zephyr bids  
A little breeze to creep between the fans  
Of careless butterflies.”

But when we turn to that marvelously gifted family into which so much of the descriptive power of Keats has since passed, we find Charles Tennyson weaving the butterfly's wing and the human heart's love into a cadence so exquisitely

delicate that his laureate brother never surpassed it: —

SONNET

*To — On Accidentally Rubbing the Dust from a  
Butterfly's Wing*

The light-set lustre of this insect's mail  
Hath bloom'd my gentlest touch — This first of May  
Has seen me sweep the shallow tints away  
From half his pinion, drooping now and pale!  
Look hither, coy and timid Isabel!  
Fair Lady, look into my eyes, and say,  
Why thou dost aye refuse thy heart to stay  
On mine, that is so fond and loves so well?  
Is beauty trusted to the morning dews,  
And to the butterfly's mischanceful wing,  
To the dissolving cloud in rainbow hues,  
To the frail tenure of an early spring,  
In blossoms, and in dyes? and must I lose  
Claim to such trust, all Nature's underling?

Mrs. Piatt, our American poet, reached a profounder, if less exquisite, touch when she thus reproved her adventurous boy for reversing the usual insect development by removing the wings of a butterfly: —

AFTER WINGS

This was your butterfly, you see, —  
His fine wings made him vain:  
The caterpillars crawl, but he  
Passed them in rich disdain. —  
My pretty boy says, "Let him be  
Only a worm again!"

O child, when things have learned to wear  
Wings once, they must be fain  
To keep them always high and fair :  
Think of the creeping pain  
Which even a butterfly must bear  
To be a worm again !

And elsewhere she moralizes, as is her  
wont: —

“ Between the falling leaf and rose-bud’s breath ;  
The bird’s forsaken nest and her new song  
(And this is all the time there is for Death) ;  
The worm and butterfly — it is not long ! ”

More thoughtful still, and in the end more  
uplifted, is this fine poem by Mary Emily Brad-  
ley, a poet from farther West : —

#### A CHRYSALIS

My little Mädchen found one day  
A curious something in her play,  
That was not fruit, nor flower, nor seed ;  
It was not anything that grew,  
Or crept, or climbed, or swam, or flew ;  
Had neither legs nor wings, indeed ;  
And yet she was not sure, she said,  
Whether it was alive or dead.

She brought it in her tiny hand  
To see if I would understand,  
And wondered when I made reply,  
“ You’ve found a baby butterfly.”  
“ A butterfly is not like this,”  
With doubtful look she answered me.



So then I told her what would be  
 Some day within the chrysalis ;  
 How, slowly, in the dull brown thing  
 Now still as death, a spotted wing,  
 And then another, would unfold,  
 Till from the empty shell would fly  
 A pretty creature, by and by,  
 All radiant in blue and gold.

“ And will it, truly ? ” questioned she —  
 Her laughing lips and eager eyes  
 All in a sparkle of surprise —  
 “ And shall your little Mädchen see ? ”  
 “ She shall ! ” I said. How could I tell  
 That ere the worm within its shell  
 Its gauzy, splendid wings had spread,  
 My little Mädchen would be dead ?

To-day the butterfly has flown, —  
 She was not here to see it fly, —  
 And sorrowing I wonder why  
 The empty shell is mine alone.  
 Perhaps the secret lies in this :  
 I too had found a chrysalis,  
 And Death that robbed me of delight  
 Was but the radiant creature's flight !

The extraordinary gifts of the butterfly race have always excited the wonder not only of naturalists, but of the most ignorant observers. Note their silent and unseen changes; the instinct by which they distinguish their favorite plant-food, as, for instance, among the scarcely differing species of the complex race

of asters, where they show themselves, as Professor Asa Gray said, "better botanists than many of us;" their skill in depositing their eggs unerringly on or near the precise plant on which the forthcoming caterpillars are fitted to feed, although they as butterflies have never tasted it. To these should be added their luxurious spread of wings, giving opportunities for those curious resemblances of color which protect them during the few days of their winged state; and, finally, the brief time when, if ever, their eggs must be laid and the continuance of the race made sure. The whole realm of animal "mimicry," as it is now termed, reaches its highest point in them, and leads to some extreme cases: as in the fact that, while butterflies are ordinarily monogamous, there is yet one species in Africa which has departed so widely from this rule that the male has not one mate only, but actually three different wives, each so utterly unlike him in appearance as to have long been taken for wholly different species.

Even in winter, Agassiz tells us, the changes in the eggs of insects go on through the season, protected by the shell, and this is still more true of the chrysalis. Living butterflies prepare for spring freedom by nestling away in great numbers during the previous autumn.

This is especially true of the early "Mourning Cloak" (*Euvanessa antiopa*), called in England the "Camberwell Beauty," which has been recorded in every month of the year in our Northern states. No one really knows where these butterflies may go, but they may be seen by scores around favorite windows, following their instinct of retreat. One of them lived all winter in the cellar of a house near mine in Cambridge, Massachusetts, changing its position half a dozen times during that period. Yet butterflies of the same or kindred species have been known to spend all of two winters in the chrysalis, leaving the intermediate summer also a blank. This is one of the few butterflies which lay their eggs in extremely methodical clusters, usually on the under side of a leaf; and sometimes a hundred may thus be hatched side by side, bending down the branches.

Let me turn again to my early outdoor journal (1861) for this brief meditation on a box containing chrysalids. "There is something infinitely touching in the thought that these creatures which have been leading a life so free, even if low and sordid, have now utterly suspended all the ceaseless action and gone to sleep in this little box of mine, each inclosed in a yet smaller self-made tomb, patiently

awaiting resurrection to an utterly new life. When I think of the complete suspension of their active existence during this dark time, and of the quiet invariable way in which all the generations of insect life have gone through the same slumber and transfiguration ever since the universe began, it makes our human birth and death seem greater mysteries than ever."

Reverting again to my old notebook, I read this confession which I still cannot retract: "I find that to me works of art do not last like those of nature. I grow tired of pictures—never of a butterfly." There is doubtless among these airy creatures something akin to the mind's visions, else why in various nations and under varying religions should the same insect have represented immortality; or why, when the most gifted of recent French writers of fiction, de Maupassant, lost control of his mind and said perpetually, "*Où sont mes idées?*" should he have fancied that he found them in butterflies? Or how else can we explain so fine a strain of profound thought as in this sonnet by an else unknown English poet, Thomas Wade, writing in 1839:—

#### THE BURIED BUTTERFLY

What lovely things are dead within the sky,  
By our corporeal vision undiscern'd —

Extinguish'd suns, that once in glory burn'd ;  
 And blighted planets mouldering gloomily  
 Beyond the girdle of the galaxy ;  
 And faded essences, in light inurn'd,  
 Of creatures spiritual, to that Deep return'd  
 From whence they sprang, in far Eternity —  
 This e'er to know is unto us forbidden ;  
 But much thereto concerning may we deem,  
 By inference from fact familiar :  
 Beneath those radiant flowers and bright grass hidden  
 Withers a thing once golden as a star  
 And seeming unsubstantial as a dream.

In passing from the transformations of the butterfly to its higher affinities and analogies, we find them suggested well in this finely touched poem by Miss Ina Coolbrith of California : —

#### THE MARIPOSA LILY

Insect or blossom ? Fragile, fairy thing,  
 Poised upon slender tip, and quivering  
 To flight ! a flower of the fields of air ;  
 A jewelled moth ; a butterfly, with rare  
 And tender tints upon his downy wing,  
 A moment resting in our happy sight ;  
 A flower held captive by a thread so slight  
 Its petal-wings of broidered gossamer  
 Are, light as the wind, with every wind astir, —  
 Wafting sweet odor, faint and exquisite.  
 O dainty nursling of the field and sky,  
 What fairer thing looks up to heaven's blue  
 And drinks the noontide sun, the dawning's dew ?  
 Thou winged bloom ! thou blossom-butterfly !



A similar range of affinities is touched less profoundly, yet with finished grace, by Mrs. Louise Chandler Moulton:—

A PAINTED FAN

Roses and butterflies snared on a fan,  
All that is left of a summer gone by;  
Of swift, bright wings that flashed in the sun,  
And loveliest blossoms that bloomed to die!

By what subtle spell did you lure them here,  
Fixing a beauty that will not change,—  
Roses whose petals never will fall,  
Bright, swift wings that never will range?

Had you owned but the skill to snare as well  
The swift-winged hours that came and went,  
To prison the words that in music died,  
And fix with a spell the heart's content,

Then had you been of magicians the chief;  
And loved and lovers should bless your art,  
If you could but have painted the soul of the thing,—  
Not the rose alone, but the rose's heart!

Flown are those days with their winged delights,  
As the odor is gone from the summer rose;  
Yet still, whenever I wave my fan,  
The soft, south wind of memory blows.

We should not overlook, moreover, the fact that our most wayward American poet, reverting for once unequivocally to the prose form, has given the best and the most graphic but-



terfly picture easily to be found in that shape. The many critics of Whitman, who have expressed the opinion that he marred and perhaps shortened his fame by choosing an habitual measure neither prose nor verse — as did the once admired author of "Proverbial Philosophy" before him — may find their conviction strengthened, perhaps, by the peculiar attractiveness of this outdoor reverie in prose :

"Aug. 4 [1880]. — A pretty sight! Where I sit in the shade — a warm day, the sun shining from cloudless skies, the forenoon well advanc'd — I look over a ten-acre field of luxuriant clover-hay, (the second crop) — the livid ripe red blossoms and dabs of August brown thickly spotting the prevailing dark-green. Over all flutter myriads of light-yellow butterflies, mostly skimming along the surface, dipping and oscillating, giving a curious animation to the scene. The beautiful spiritual insects! straw-color'd Psyches! Occasionally one of them leaves his mates, and mounts, perhaps spirally, perhaps in a straight line in the air, fluttering up, up, till literally out of sight. In the lane as I came along just now I noticed one spot, ten feet square or so, where more than a hundred had collected, holding a revel, a gyration-dance, or butterfly good-time, winding and circling, down and across, but

always keeping within the limits. The little creatures have come out all of a sudden the last few days, and are now very plentiful. As I sit outdoors, or walk, I hardly look around without somewhere seeing two (always two) fluttering through the air in amorous dalliance. Then their inimitable color, their fragility, peculiar motion — and that strange, frequent way of one leaving the crowd and mounting up, up in the free ether, and apparently never returning. As I look over the field, these yellow-wings everywhere mildly sparkling, many snowy blossoms of the wild carrot gracefully bending on their tall and taper stems — while for sounds, the distant guttural screech of a flock of guinea-hens comes shrilly yet somehow musically to my ears. And now a faint growl of heat-thunder in the north — and ever the low rising and falling wind-purr from the tops of the maples and willows.

“ Aug. 20. — Butterflies and butterflies (taking the place of the bumblebees of three months since, who have quite disappear'd) continue to flit to and fro, all sorts, white, yellow, brown, purple — now and then some gorgeous yellow flashing lazily by on wings like artists' palettes dabb'd with every color. Over the breast of the pond I notice many white ones, crossing, pursuing their idle capricious

flight. Near where I sit grows a tall-stemm'd weed topt with a profusion of rich scarlet blossoms, on which the snowy insects alight and dally, sometimes four or five of them at a time. By and by a hummingbird visits the same, and I watch him coming and going, daintily balancing and shimmering about. These white butterflies give new beautiful contrasts to the pure greens of the August foliage (we have had some copious rains lately), and over the glistening bronze of the pond-surface. You can tame even such insects; I have one big and handsome moth down here, knows and comes to me, likes me to hold him upon my extended hand.

“Another Day, later. — A grand, twelve-acre field of ripe cabbages with their prevailing hue of malachite green, and floating-flying over and among them in all directions myriads of these same white butterflies. As I came up the lane to-day I saw a living globe of the same, two or three feet in diameter, many scores cluster'd together and rolling along in the air, adhering to their ball-shape, six or eight feet above the ground.”

This white butterfly described is doubtless the cabbage butterfly (*Pieris rapæ*) already mentioned. It was too early in the season for its full practice of that swarming propensity in

which it surpasses all others, and which a poet thus puts on record; but Mr. Scudder tells us of an occasion when Dr. Schultze found himself in a dead calm in the Baltic Sea, and “steamed for three hours and a distance of thirty miles through a continuous flock of the Cabbage butterfly, from ten to thirty miles from the main land, and only five miles less than that from the nearest island; afterward the shore was found strewn with their dead bodies.”

If only to show that others, twenty years before Whitman, had written for their own pleasure some outdoor records of these fair creatures, I will venture to print from my old notebook this mention of a walk in Princeton, Massachusetts, a mountain village which I have never seen surpassed as a nursery of butterflies and birds:—

“July 16 [1862].— In the morning went to visit Miss ——’s school. Often as I have dreamed of a more abundant world of insects than any ever seen, I never enjoyed it more vividly than in walking along the breezy upland road, lined with a continuous row of milkweed blossoms and white flowering alder, all ablaze with butterflies. I might have picked off hundreds of *Aphrodites* by hand, so absorbed were they in their pretty pursuit; and

all the interspaces between their broader wings seemed filled with little skipper butterflies, and pretty painted-ladies (*Pharos*) and an occasional *Comma*. The rarer *Idalia* and *Huntera* sometimes visit them also and a host of dipterous, hymenopterous and hemipterous things. The beautiful mountain breeze played forever over them and it seemed a busy and a blissful world."

These names have all doubtless suffered what may be called a land-change, in the more than forty years since this was written,—so constant are the shiftings of insect family names in the hands of the scientists,—but they bring back, to one person at least, very happy memories of summer friends.

It is a curious fact, yet perhaps not wholly inappropriate to our broad and sunny American continent, that while England far exceeds us in the thorough and patient study of the habits of the insect world, yet butterflies figure less, on the whole, in English poetry than in American. Looking somewhat carefully, for instance, through the nearly six hundred pages of Sir M. E. Grant-Duff's recent "Anthology of Victorian Poetry," I find but one allusion to these fair things, namely, in Mrs. Norton's couplet, taken from "The Lady of La Garaye:"—

"The butterfly its tiny mate pursues  
With rapid fluttering of its painted hues."



Yet Mr. Stedman in his volume of American poetry — a book of about the same size — has a number of poems on this precise subject, several of which have here been quoted; while other fine passages he fails to quote, as that in which Alfred Street speaks of

“ the last butterfly,  
Like a wing'd violet, floating in the meek,  
Pink-color'd sunshine, sinks his velvet feet  
Within the pillar'd mullein's delicate down,  
And shuts and opens his unruffled fans.”

Does this difference come from our more varied landscape, or from our brighter sunshine, lending a more brilliant tint to the waving wings? Of course this comparison may be regarded as accidental, since no butterfly allusion is more familiar than that of Wordsworth, —

“ My sister Emmeline and I  
Together chased the butterfly; ”

although in this, undoubtedly, the human interest is predominant, and the insect furnishes only an excuse for it. Bayley's “ I'd be a butterfly ” is hardly worth mentioning, or Rogers's too didactic “ Child of the sun ! ” but no four lines present this winged world with more solemn impressiveness than where Lord de Tabley in his “ Circe ” writes, —



“ And the great goblin moth, who bears  
 Between his wings the ruin'd eyes of death ;  
 And the enamell'd sails  
 Of butterflies, who watch the morning's breath.”

Yet this is only a single stanza, and I know of no sustained poem on the butterfly so full of deep thought and imagination — despite some technical defects — as this, by an author less known than she should be, Mrs. Alice Archer James, of Urbana, Ohio. With it this series of quotations and reminiscences may well enough end, the writer fearing lest he may, after all, have only called down upon himself the reproach of Chaucer, —

“ Swiche talking is nat worth a boterflie.”

#### THE BUTTERFLY

I am not what I was yesterday,  
 God knows my name.  
 I am made in a smooth and beautiful way,  
 And full of flame.

The color of corn are my pretty wings,  
 My flower is blue.  
 I kiss its topmost pearl, it swings  
 And I swing too.

I dance above the tawny grass  
 In the sunny air,  
 So tantalized to have to pass  
 Love everywhere.

O Earth, O Sky, you are mine to roam  
In liberty.

I am the soul and I have no home, —  
Take care of me.

For double I drift through a double world  
Of spirit and sense ;

I and my symbol together whirled  
From who knows whence ?

There 's a tiny weed, God knows what good, —  
It sits in the moss.

Its wings are heavy and spotted with blood  
Across and across.

I sometimes settle a moment there,  
And I am so sweet,  
That what it lacks of the glad and fair  
I fill complete.

The little white moon was once like me ;  
But her wings are one.  
Or perhaps they closèd together be  
As she swings in the sun.

When the clovers close their three green wings  
Just as I do,  
I creep to the primrose heart of things,  
And close mine, too.

And then wide opens the candid night,  
Serene and intense ;  
For she has, instead of love and light,  
God's confidence.

And I watch that other butterfly,  
The one-winged moon,  
Till, drunk with sweets in which I lie,  
I dream and swoon.

And then when I to three days grow,  
I find out pain.  
For swift there comes an ache, — I know  
That I am twain.

And nevermore can I be one  
In liberty.  
O Earth, O Sky, your use is done,  
Take care of me.

## X

### WORDSWORTHSHIRE

**T**HOUSANDS of people climb eagerly each year to the high seats of the cheery four-handed coaches that roll through the Lake District of England, upon white roads winding over hill and dale, on driveways as smooth as marble pavement; but among these travelers it was left for Lowell to hit upon one happy name for the whole region, and to christen it Wordsworthshire. It is Wordsworth who represents its centre; in that region he was born, in that region he died, and the little churchyard at Grasmere, where his grave is to be seen, lies so close to the stopping-place of the coaches that either the most deliberate English guest, or the most hurried American, is able to step from his hotel after dinner and take a look at the storied spot while his horses are being reharnessed. Grasmere is the point at which Lake roads mainly centre, and so moderate is the British taste for stately monuments, when compared with the more showy habits of us Americans, that the

simple gravestone of Wordsworth yet remains without disturbance, having the graves of the family around, and poor Hartley Coleridge's stone set close behind, with the pathetic motto, "By Thy cross and passion," carved upon it.

Almost all travelers view these modest memorials hastily, and then drive on. But the American pilgrim who has come from afar among the heights of Wordsworthshire has perhaps experienced as he went onward what John Keats (in 1818) described as being his feelings when he climbed Skiddaw, as if he were "going to a tournament." Thus impressed, the traveler gathers by degrees in imagination a group of companions around him, in the semblance of those honored heroes who dwelt in Wordsworthshire so long. Through the letters and descriptions, and even satires, of their day, he recognizes them by their very looks. He conjures up for himself such a group as might have visited Grasmere when the smooth, white, winding roads did not exist, and when the dashing coachmen were not; and when those who met were simply friends and acquaintances, gathered for outdoor comradeship, unmindful of fame.

First comes, for instance, a tall man with drooping and narrow shoulders, and legs so ill-shaped that though he had, as De Quincey

estimates, walked one hundred and eighty thousand miles with them, some feminine critic remarked that he ought to have a better pair for Sundays. He wears a blue-black cape over a frilled shirt, and an old-fashioned cutaway coat with a bit of an old "boxer" hat, whatever that may be, reinforced by an umbrella above his head, and a green shade over his eyes. This is Wordsworth. Then imagination brings up a man broadly built, of middle height, clumsy and rolling in gait, heavy-faced, yet with magnificent forehead, and with jet black hair, now turning gray. That is Coleridge. Then comes a younger man, under-sized, with shuffling gait, prematurely gray, carrying his cane as if it were a gun, alternately running and stopping short; that is Hartley Coleridge, — "the children's poet," they call him, and he seems a grown-up child himself. Then there appears a slender and spectacled man, wearing a cap on his head and wooden clogs on his feet; carrying a book in his hand and looking at you vaguely, as if you were a book, but he could not read you; this is Southey. A smaller man, but also slender, with large brown eyes, is De Quincey, of whom Southey said to a friend, "I will thank you, sir, to tell him that he is one of the greatest scoundrels living." And there again, looking as if sent into the



world to be a contrast to all these wise philosophers, is a man of great height and superb shoulders, dressed in loosely collared shirt and white duck trousers, and standing by the tiller of his boat as it comes up to the pier on Windermere. This is Christopher North, less well known as John Wilson, who, when he springs on shore, will seem to make the earth tremble under him, with his agile weight. This man has before now walked, it is claimed, fifty-seven miles in eight hours, and has jumped the Cherwell where it is twenty-three feet wide. Then comes a tall, dark-eyed man with clerical and commanding look, and two fine boys beside him ; he is Dr. Thomas Arnold ; and the schoolboy John Ruskin is here watching them all. Add to these two ladies, Mrs. Wordsworth, so exquisitely described in the noblest poem of wedded love ever written, beginning " She was a phantom of delight," and Dorothy Wordsworth, with her small figure, stooping shoulders, quick movements, and wild brown eyes, who has rejected, according to Disraeli, half a dozen lovers, including Hazlitt, in order to stay with her brother. This is the group which fancy calls around us, and they have come together, sometimes walking long distances over mountain paths from the various headquarters of poetic life among the lakes and mountains

of Wordsworthshire. The especial charm which the American visitor finds there, indeed, is in choosing for himself some one point of interest and making it the centre of his explorations.

The region of Wordsworthshire, of course, includes Cockermouth in Cumberland, where Wordsworth and his brothers and sisters were born, and Hawkshead, a quaint little hamlet of a few streets only, with stone houses such as he called "gray huts" fronting in different directions. This is where Wordsworth was sent to school after his mother's death in his ninth year. Here he used to make a daily circuit of Esthwaite Lake, five miles round, before school hours, with a favorite schoolfellow, John Fleming, —

"Repeating favorite verses with one voice,  
Or conning more, as happy as the birds,  
That with us chanted."

Here, in the winter, when the lake was frozen, he got his materials for the only poem on skating which has found a real place in literature, although Mr. W. T. Palmer has lately published an admirable prose sketch called "Skating on Windermere" ("Lake-Country Rambles"). We know of Wordsworth, moreover, that his inexhaustible love of outdoor things was not, as in the case of so many Englishmen, merely a

minor incident in some form of athletic sports, but that his mind was full of images of natural beauty, while he also loved all exercise that was in itself daring and even perilous. He says in "The Recluse," —

" Nothing at that time

So welcome, no temptation half so dear,  
As that which urged me to a daring feat :  
Deep pools, tall trees, black chasms, and dizzy crags,  
And tottering towers — I loved to stand and read  
Their looks."

Wordsworth's earlier poems were largely written far from the Lake District, while staying with Coleridge at Nether Stowey, but he and his sister removed to Grasmere in 1799. The poet Gray had visited that lake thirty years before, and had described the region as one of the "sweetest landscapes that art ever attempted to imitate." He thus portrays it: "The bosom of the mountains spreading here into a broad basin discovers in the midst Grasmere-Water. Its margin is hollowed into small bays, with bold eminences, some of rock, some of soft turf, that half conceal and vary the figure of the little lake they command. From the shore, a low promontory pushes itself far into the water, and on it stands a white village, with the parish church rising in the midst of it. Hanging inclosures, cornfields, and mead-

ows, green as an emerald, with their trees, and hedges, and cattle, fill up the whole space from the edge of the water; and just opposite to you is a large farm-house, at the bottom of a steep, smooth lawn, embosomed in old woods which climb halfway up the mountain side, and discover above them a broken line of crags that crown the scene. Not a single red tile, no flaring gentleman's house, or garden walls, break in upon the repose of this little unsuspected paradise; but all is peace, rusticity, and happy poverty in its neatest and most becoming attire."

This, or something approaching this, was still the condition in which Wordsworth and his sister found that region; and in his "Description of the Scenery of the Lakes" he earnestly deploras the manner in which high-roads and summer visitors were just beginning to intrude. It was not until 1726 that an extensive system of roads had been even attempted in that region, where heretofore the only communication had been by means of pack-horses on rough mountain paths, and it was not established, after its fashion, until 1750. Not until then was that immortal couplet called forth by village enthusiasm, —

"Had you seen these roads before they were made  
You would lift up your hands and bless General Wade."

It was to this region of peace that the Wordsworths betook themselves previous to the writing of the poem called "The Recluse;" he dwelling with his sister, of whom he says, —

"Where'er my footsteps turned,  
Her voice was like a hidden bird that sang;  
The thought of her was like a flash of light  
Or an unseen companionship, a breath  
Of fragrance independent of the wind."

Here he wrote "The Brothers," based on an incident actually occurring at Grasmere; here, too, "The Idle Shepherd Boys," which Southey criticised as making the shepherd boys trim their hats with rushes, although, as Wordsworth says proudly, "Just as the words had passed his lips, two boys appeared with the very plant entwined around their hats." Here, in describing a tarn beneath Helvellyn, he says, —

"There sometimes doth a leaping fish  
Send through the tarn a lonely cheer,"

a statement which was gravely censured by good Mrs. Barbauld as impossible. Here he wrote "The Pet Lamb," and turned the head of "Little Barbara Lewthwaite, a child of beauty rare," the heroine, through the fact that the poem was unluckily copied into a child's reading-book which had been introduced into her school; here he made the poem "On the



Naming of Places," beside a brook of which he says, "I have composed thousands of verses by the side of it." Here Coleridge and Lamb visited him, but we get the amplest picture of these poet-lives in the diary of Dorothy Wordsworth, where, day by day, the events which suggested the poems were minutely described, with the circumstances under which each was written, and also the time and place where she copied it. There was such unity between these two that Wordsworth observed as well through her eyes as through his own, and often he seemed simply to versify her written descriptions. Later, after his marriage, his wife shared this influence over him. One of the points oftenest visited by the modern pilgrim is that still charming scene at Ullswater, in the woods below Gowbarrow Park, where daffodils begin to grow along the shore, and continue, as I can testify, into what Dorothy Wordsworth well describes as "a long belt" of them. This is the scene of the poem beginning, —

"I wandered lonely as a cloud,"

and nothing better illustrates the extent to which Wordsworth himself really created descriptive outdoor poetry of simple nature in English literature than that this poem should have been at first ridiculed in a degree to call



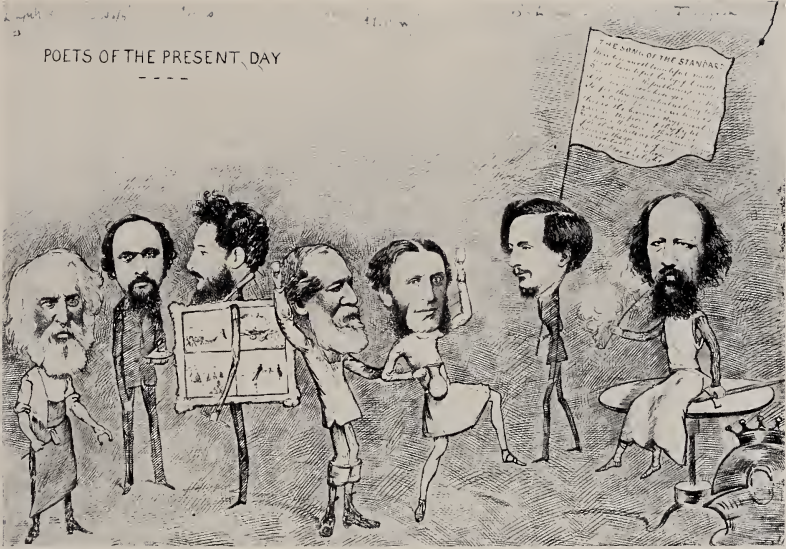
forth from Wordsworth the retort that "there were two lines in that little poem which, if thoroughly felt, would annihilate nine tenths of the reviews of the kingdom, as they would find no readers." These two lines were in reference to the daffodils, —

"They flash upon that inward eye  
Which is the bliss of solitude,"

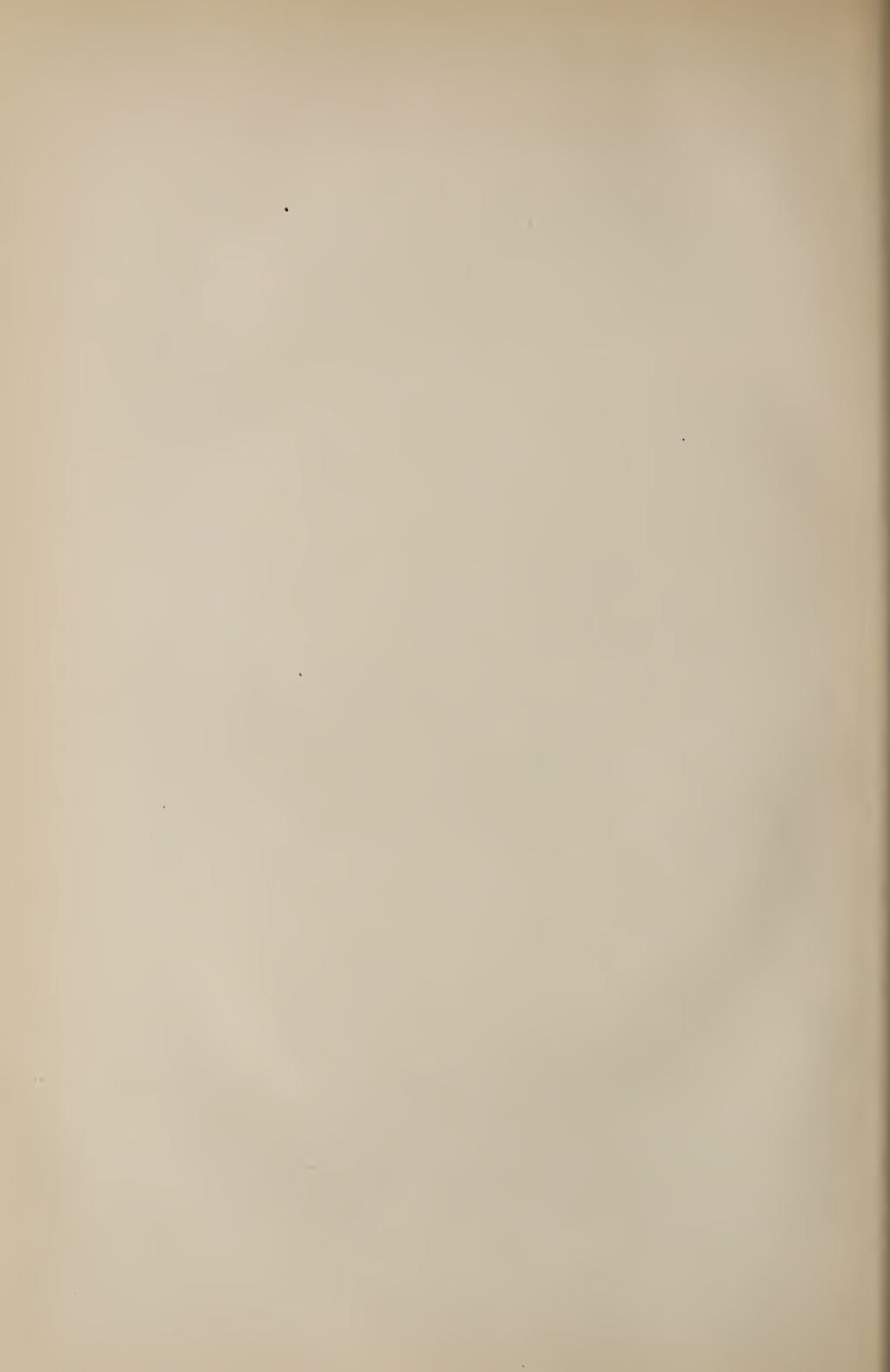
and were contributed by Mrs. Wordsworth.

As, in a poet-haunted region, the visitor easily follows up the wanderings of the poet for the sake of the harvest he brought back from them, so the same visitor wishes to follow the poet back to his home to reach the humblest traditions of his personality which still linger there. Thus at Grasmere you can either row on the lake with its abundant water-lilies, which so disappoint an American by their scentlessness; or you can linger round the rose-covered Dove Cottage, where the cheery old custodian remembers Wordsworth well, and tells you that he was thought "naught o', naught o' at a'," in his lifetime, and then narrates how she could have made her fortune by buying up the poet's furniture, which was sold for a song after he died. Alas! she only bought two rugs and a chair, and now there is nothing left of them but shreds. Or you can visit Rydal Mount, on high, hilly ground, with

POETS OF THE PRESENT DAY



POETS OF THE PRESENT DAY



trees and flowers and terraced walks, where, as another old woman tells you, Wordsworth used to walk up and down "bumming awa' wi' his poetry," and leaving his sister to pick up his rhymes and write them out. In the region about Rydal Mount, Canon Rawnsley says, he was not recognized as Poet Laureate by his country neighbors, but was "nobbut old Wadsworth o' Rydal," the "stamp-maister." Within the house at Rydal Mount, if you are fortunate enough to be admitted, you will see the cuckoo clock of which the poet wrote, and Haydon's fine picture of him, which must have a genuine resemblance, as it strongly suggests that man of very distinguished appearance, the present Mr. William Wordsworth of Capri, grandson of the poet, and himself a favorite of the Muse, although modestly hiding his gifts by refusing to publish his productions.

At Grasmere, too, you see the rush-bearing, a festival now preserved only there and at Ambleside, and drawing children and parents from long distances to a quaint old church dedicated to St. Oswald. This building is supposed to date back farther than the Norman Conquest, as it is mentioned in Doomsday Book, and its extant records stretch back over nearly eight centuries. Up to 1840, it had no floor above the bare earth, which it was the

custom to strew with rushes immediately after the hay harvest in each year; and though the floor is long since built, the rush-bearing still takes place annually on the Saturday next after August 5, St. Oswald's day. Though the ceremony occurs late in the afternoon, the children are gathering in all day, and sit upon the stone wall around the church waiting for the village band, or occasionally break away in smaller groups of two or three, holding aloft their wreaths or high, decked staves and crosses, in every conceivable variety of structure. They refresh themselves during the day with hot little gingerbread cakes from a small shop just outside the churchyard, where the omnipresent English old woman dispenses her counterfeit men and animals to an ever renewing group of children. After the straggling procession has finally passed by, there awaits the elder guests a different entertainment in a wrestling match, coeval with the rush-bearing, but taking place at the other end of the village, where country youths, standing in a circle, try falls with one another in turn, all criticised as freely by the bystanders and measured as closely by their previous laurels as if they were on a cricket ground in England, or a baseball ground in America. Both of these old-time festivals are honest, quaint,

simple, and commanding interest from all, lay or clerical. Hartley Coleridge, himself, used to head the rush-bearing, while he lived; and when one thinks of him one must recall with pitying tenderness the "philosopher child," as he was called, who could not enjoy a ride in a wheelbarrow in boyhood, because, as he said, "the pity is that I 'se always thinking of my thoughts;"—a child so dreamy that five minutes after his mother had whipped him he would go up and ask her to whip him again, and so sensitive that if any one began to read from a newspaper he would leave the room for fear there should be something dreadful in it.

We learn from De Quincey's "Literary Reminiscences" at least one side of that laborious author's life at Dove Cottage, and we feel a curious desire to know the precise dimensions of the little sitting-room which he describes as being "also and more justly termed the library," and as "populous with books." He gives the dimensions of the room as "seventeen feet by twelve, and seven and a half feet high," and when I asked his old housekeeper how he could have found room for his bookshelves, since De Quincey himself gives the total number of his books as six thousand, she replied with surprise that his books were piled all round the wall to the ceiling. Sometimes



they were in two or three detached piles, one above the other, and wherever there were chinks in the corners, or books of different sizes met, he chose those places for the safe-keeping of his money. Whenever he wanted a sovereign or two, she said, he went to some corner and fished it out. Here De Quincey lived and studied, wrote and thought, drinking tea, as another narrator says, from "eight at night to four in the morning," unless engaged in drinking something stronger out of a decanter behind the teapot. Here he came to live unmarried in 1808, — eight years before his marriage to Margaret Simpson, — and here he remained until he removed to London.

Windermere has fewer strictly literary associations than Grasmere, but Professor John Wilson and his home at Elleray furnish such associations through the traditions of his long residence. This was first in the one-storied house with its great sycamore-tree, still visible, of which he said that "not even in the days of the Druids could there have been such another tree. It would have been easier to suppose two Shakespeares." It was at Elleray that in building his large new house, opposite, he put down turf instead of boards in his dining-room, that he might take his favorite pursuit of cock-fighting by way of dessert.

The country side all knew him, knew that he could, in his own phrase, "sail a boat, or jump a long jump, or wrestle, or fight a cock, or write a stanza," against any man in that region. Looking down on Windermere, where the visitor is now surprised at seeing so little sailing, he may recall the day when the "Admiral of the Lake," as Wilson was called, in his ten-oared barge, headed the gay procession of fifty boats with music and streamers, winding its way among the islands and along the shore, that he might show to Scott, Wordsworth, Canning, Lockhart, and the rest, the charms of Windermere.

It has been well said that Greta Hall is to Keswick what Dove Cottage is to Grasmere. Coleridge lived there first, then Southey for forty years, while Coleridge usually wandered afar, Southey supporting his family. Charles Lamb describes his visit to Greta Hall, under protest, as he thought the dirt and mud of London so much better than anything else, that he wished hills, woods, lakes, and mountains "to the Eternal Devil;" but every American student finds it full of delightful associations. They show you the very rooms where Southey's great collection of books, numbering fourteen thousand volumes, was kept; more than a thousand of these having been

bound in cambric of various colors by the ladies of the household. These were kept in an especial chamber, which he christened "the Cottonian library." They show also the very place where he used to sit for hours out of doors reading or writing, his chair being placed on the bowling green. One may see in the church the impressive reclining marble statue of Southey, with its fine face and wonderfully youthful head of hair,—hair that absolutely grew dark again, his son tells us, after becoming almost white, and was, moreover, only thicker as he grew older.

Southey was for many years Poet Laureate, and had a comfortable pension; his literary work was highly paid, but no author ever worked harder and more continuously. His daily life is best summed up for us in a letter which he wrote in 1814 declining a certain proposition from an editor: "I cannot get through more than at present, unless I give up sleep, or the little exercise which I take (and I walk to the Crag [one mile] before breakfast); and, that hour excepted, and my meals (barely the meals, for I remain not one minute after them), the pen or the book is always in my hand." His one recreation was in a mountain excursion or picnic enterprise, in which he shone, for he thought little of a walk

of twenty-five miles; or in all-day excursions with his own and the Coleridge children, as far as Otterbiel Bay on Derwentwater. But the reader can scarcely wonder, after tracing the records of a life so absolutely laborious, how the inexhaustible student who followed it should have dwelt with a certain delight in his "Omniana" upon the little town of Norcia in the papal territories, where a law was made that all men who could read and write should be excluded from taking any part in the government, so that their Board of Control, consisting of four persons, was called *Li quattro Illiterati* ("The Four Illiterates"). Nor can it cause surprise that, before he was sixty-eight, mind and memory both failed, and his greatest pleasure was in wandering about his library, taking down his books mechanically, and sometimes hiding them one behind another, so that he might in his second childishness look for them again.

Yet so great was Southey's enjoyment, on the literary side, during this long sedentary career, that he wrote to Coleridge (March 12, 1804), "Talk of the happiness of getting a great prize in the lottery! What is that to the opening of a box of books! The joy of lifting up the cover must be something like what we shall feel when Peter the Porter opens the

door upstairs, [into heaven] and says, 'Please to walk in, sir!' That I shall never be paid for my labor according to the current value of time and labor, is tolerably certain; but if any one should offer me ten thousand pounds to forego that labor, I should bid him and his money go to the devil, for twice that sum could not purchase me half the enjoyment." Four years later he wrote, "Huzza! two-and-twenty volumes already; the 'Cid,' when reprinted, will make two more; and, please God, five a year in addition as long as I live."

You go from Keswick up over Windy Brow to Chestnut Hill, and still find in its garden and among its rhododendrons the pretty cottage whither Shelley, just expelled from Oxford, came at the age of nineteen (1811) with his bride of sixteen, both so poor that he wrote, "We are in danger every day of being deprived of the necessaries of life;" and where the young bride said in answer to an inquiry, "The garden is not ours; but then, you know, the people let us run about in it whenever Percy and I are tired of sitting in the house." The visitor finds himself in the very room where the young poet wrote his address to the Irish people and many poems; where he tried chemical experiments after dark, and his landlord, Gideon Dare, drove him out of the house next



day, as being concerned in what he called "black art." Members of the Dare family still live there, and preserve the tradition with that fidelity always shown by descendants in commemorating even the eccentricities of their lawful progenitors; just as old college alumni show a pride even in the pranks of their classmates.

Mrs. Shelley's remark about the garden was made, according to De Quincey, to one of the ladies of the Southey family who called upon the young people at the suggestion of the Duke of Norfolk, who took an interest in them. De Quincey, himself, regrets not having called upon Shelley, although thirteen miles away, — which was a trifle in the Lake District, — and would have been glad, he says, to offer him the use of his library, "which, being rich in the wickedest of German speculations, would naturally have been more to Shelley's taste than the Spanish library of Southey." This was, it must be remembered, six years before Shelley had made himself famous by the "Revolt of Islam."

Passing up in the same direction by what is called Rakefoot Lane, you turn, as Thomas Gray did in 1769, into a cornfield on the right called Castelrigg, and see the same circle of Druid stones, some fifty in number, which he described. Druid stones and gypsies always



seem to the American traveler in England so naturally associated and so nearly coeval that I remember to have seen with delight a large and quite luxurious gypsy wagon stationed near us as we went toward the stones. There were the occupants, with their horses feeding near them, children gamboling about, and a swarthy and handsome woman smiling at us as we waved a passing salute. Unfortunately for the picturesqueness of the world, the gypsies are steadily passing over to America, where they cease to be picturesque, and sometimes become even useful; while the Druid stones are left behind, although there have been, it is said, propositions sent across the Atlantic for the removal, or at least the purchase, of Stonehenge.

Descending to Derwentwater, you come out on Friars' Crag, and stand in the spot where Ruskin drew his first impressions of the beauties of nature. He says in "Modern Painters," "The first thing which I remember, as an event in life, was being taken by my nurse to the brow of Friars' Crag on Derwentwater; the intense joy, mingled with awe, that I had in looking through the mossy roots, over the crag, into the dark lake, has associated itself more or less with all twinings of trees ever since." He said afterwards, "The scene from Friars' Crag is

one of the three or four most beautiful views in Europe. And, when I first saw Keswick, it was a place almost too beautiful to live in." Farther down the lake, in Otterfield Bay, is the place where Southey used to take his own and the Coleridge children on the water, as Mrs. Coleridge described it, "all day" and "pretty often during the summer."

The descriptions of the mountains in Wordsworthshire by the Lake Poets and prose writers are apt to impress an American coming to this region — perhaps from among the Alps, if not from the Rocky Mountains or the Himalayas — with a sense of extreme exaggeration. They are called "vast and towering masses," "enormous barriers," and Scott wrote of "the mighty Helvellyn and Catchedecam." But all thought of comparative criticism soon passes from the visitor's mind, since the mountains of the Lake District are so striking in themselves, and are set off in such a marked way by the valleys as to create their own standard of measurement; and one no more criticises them in respect to size alone than one complains of a family of tall and well-built men for not being a set of Patagonian giants. The peculiarity of the valleys, moreover, pointed out long since by Wordsworth, is that they are not merely convex cups, as in most mountain regions, but are

more like level floors, marking out definitely the abruptly rising heights, and so enhancing them. "They are not formed, as are most of the celebrated Welsh vallies," Wordsworth says, "by an approximation of the sloping bases of the opposite mountains towards each other, leaving little more between than a channel for the passage of a hasty river; but the bottom of these vallies is, for the most part, a spacious and gently declining area, apparently level as the floor of a temple, or the surface of a lake, and beautifully broken, in many cases, by rocks and hills, which rise up like islands from the plain."

These valleys, moreover, do not lie along large streams, and the lakes they hold are fed at most by a mountain torrent, justly baptized as a "force." A "tarn" is usually a small lake, part way up the mountain side, and has, as Wordsworth points out, no main feeder, and its name, perhaps, vindicates De Quincey's derivation of the word, that it comes from the Danish "taaren," a trickling, being a gradual accumulation of water from the surfaces of rock. There are often masses of rock or detached boulders around the edges of these tarns; and Tennyson, always an accurate observer of nature, says that his hero —

"Roving the trackless realms of Lyonness  
Had found a glen, gray boulder and black tarn."

All observations of English natural scenery are sure, after all, to lead us back to Tennyson. Carlyle met him and his wife in the Lake District on their wedding journey, and described him as having "a great shock of rough dusty dark hair, bright laughing hazel eyes, massive aquiline face, most massive yet most delicate, of sallow brown complexion almost Indian-looking, clothes cynically loose, free and easy. His voice musically metallic, fit for loud laughter and piercing wail, and all that may lie between."

The Laureate Wordsworth was then just dead, and a new Laureate was soon to reign in Tennyson himself, a literary sovereign whose throne was to be far from Wordsworthshire.

NOTE. — The imaginary sketch, in this chapter, of a group of Lake authors, assembled in the haunts they loved, is to be credited in part to my friend, the Rev. H. D. Rawnsley, Honorary Canon of Carlisle, England, who has a similar passage in his "Literary Associations of English Lakes," though the details in my picture vary somewhat from those in his.

## XI

### THE CLOSE OF THE VICTORIAN EPOCH

THE deaths of Herbert Spencer and Philip James Bailey, following on those of Lord Houghton, Thomas Hughes, and Aubrey de Vere, have taken away the last of the figures who peculiarly represented, for Americans at least, the Victorian literary epoch, just as the death of Stepniak dismissed the last of the anglicized Russians, and that of Sainte-Beuve the last of the great French critics. The first two among these owed their earliest really enthusiastic readers to this country, while Hughes made himself half American, first by his sympathies, and then by his colonial experiments. Aubrey de Vere published poems in our magazines, and Lord Houghton opened his heart and home to all of us, as he did, indeed, to all the outer world. Of these authors and some of their compeers, I propose to set down a few notes of remembrance.

The death of Herbert Spencer (1820-1903) seemed in a manner to shift men's thoughts

Paris, le 25 juin 1879  
(71, rue Montarnette)

Colonel,

J'ai reçu votre mot si flatteur pour moi.  
Je n'ai pas encore reçu le volume que vous  
m'annoncez, mais je ne veux pas tarder à vous  
exprimer le sentiment de gratitude que j'éprouve  
à ces témoignages d'attention qui me viennent  
depuis quelque temps de vos compatriotes,  
et de celui que je reçois de vous en particulier.

Veuillez agréer, Colonel, l'hommage  
de ma haute considération,

Santerberg





for a moment to an earlier generation, not so much because of his advanced years, as because he seemed to have made his definitive and crowning contribution to human thought more than thirty years ago, — perhaps in his “Principles of Psychology” in 1872, — and to have flung about his detached seeds of thought ever since, to take root widely, indeed, yet in an essentially fragmentary way. Spread far over men’s minds, their scattered harvest has often concealed and even obstructed the local product, just as our Southern battlefields are now covered with blossoming peach-trees, which have sprung from the peach-stones that the Union soldiers threw away. Seeming in one point of view a triumph, this result, nevertheless, contrasts greatly with the impression produced by the recently published letters of Darwin, where every letter suggests some inquiry still pending or the germ of some still unexplored harvest for the future. This helps us to understand why it is that Spencer’s fame still remains the more insular of the two. Neither of them wrote, of course, with French terseness, or paid that penalty of shallowness to which French intellect is so often limited. Neither Darwin nor Spencer can be said to have imagination or humor; but the charm of an absolutely ingenuous nature is always felt

in Darwin, whereas in Spencer, at his best, there is an atmosphere which, if not self-assertion, at least bears kindred to it. Even in the collection and combination of details, as made by these two, there is a difference. Darwin is methodical, connected, and above all things moderate and guarded; while Spencer's mind often seems a vast landing-net thrown out for the gathering of every fact which he desires to find, however scanty the harvest. He accounts the hearsay of a single traveler to be more than equivalent, if it tends in his own favorite direction, to the most elaborate tissue of evidence that inclines the other way.

Spencer had what Talleyrand once defined as "the weakness of omniscience," giving unflinchingly his opinions on banking, on dancing, or on astronomy; and, although he went through life constantly widening his allusions and interests, while Darwin modestly lamented the steady narrowing of his own, yet it is hard to see how any person brought in contact with both, either personally or through reading, can help finding in Darwin not only the sweeter and humbler, but the richer and more lasting, nature of the two. Writing at once for trained students and for the liberal public, Spencer reached the latter easily, and the former with less marked success. His generalizations were

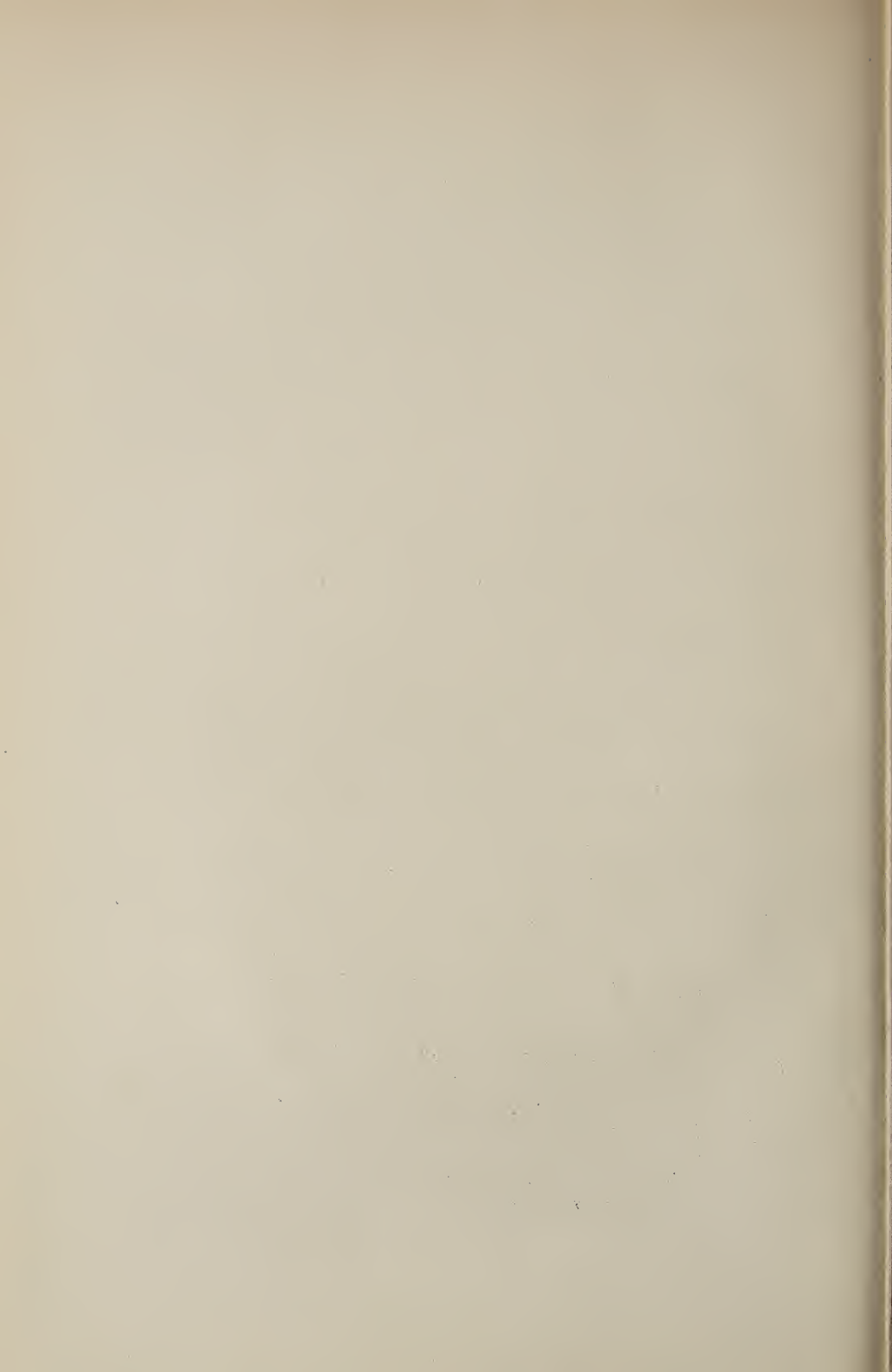
The Alvarion Tremont Street  
Boston  
March 29, 1891

My dear Sir

I enclose an introductory  
note to you and I take  
the liberty of asking when  
I may have the honour of  
seeing you

I leave Boston for a few days  
but I shall be back on the 3<sup>d</sup>  
of April and shall be happy  
to call upon you at any time  
if you will allow me to

Yours faithfully  
S. Stepien



often vague, and in a manner anticipatory; he relied on evidence yet to come in, and while he thus popularized in a manner irresistible, he did not so surely carry with him the profoundest minds. His criticisms of other authors were often superficial and shallow, as in the case of Kant and Hamilton; and had not, in short, the profound and self-controlled patience of Darwin. This being true of Spencer even as a home-keeping student, it became especially visible in his one noticeable experience as a traveler, and those present at his farewell dinner in New York still recall vividly the amusing effect produced by his cautioning his hearers against baldness as an outcome of the eager American life, whereas those who sat with him at the banquet seemed like an assemblage of highly bewigged men compared with the notoriously bald-headed congregation of English barristers to be seen every Sunday at the Temple Church in London.

The recognized host of literary Americans in London, during the latter half of the last century, — after the death of Samuel Rogers in 1855, — was unquestionably the late Lord Houghton (1809–85), who, however, bore his original name of Milnes until 1863. Never was a phrase better employed in the mere



title of a book than that given by his biographer, Sir Wemyss Reid, to the work entitled "Life, Letters and Friendships of R. M. Milnes;" for his friendships were as lasting as his life, and almost as numerous as his letters. Responding to all introductions with more than even the accustomed London promptness, Lord Houghton often was the first to call upon any well-accredited American of literary pursuits arriving in London, to follow him up with invitations, and, if necessary, to send him home at last with formal resolutions of regard, either moved or seconded by Lord Houghton. Better still, he was loyal to this nation itself in its day of anguish, when even Gladstone had failed it. Indeed, he wrote to me, when I sent him two volumes of memoirs of Harvard students who had died in the Union army, that they were men whom "Europe has learned to honor and would do well to imitate." Not striking in appearance, he was a man of more than English range of social culture; and he puts on record somewhere his difficulty in finding half a dozen men in London besides himself who could be invited to a dinner-party to meet Frenchmen who spoke no English. His "Life of Keats" still remains an admirable and a very difficult piece of work; and his sketch of Landor in "Mono-

Feb. 27<sup>th</sup>/73/

Down,  
Beckenham, Kent.

My dear Sir

My wife has just finished reading about your life with a Black Regiment, & you must allow me to thank you heartily for the very great pleasure which it has in many ways given us. - I always thought well of the negroes, from the little which I have seen of them; & I have been delighted to have my former impressions confirmed, & their character & mental powers

so ably helped. When you were  
here, I did not know of  
the noble position which  
you had filled. I had  
formerly used about to thank  
you, but failed to connect  
your name with your admirable  
undertaking. Although we enjoyed  
greatly your visit to Brown,  
my wife & myself have since  
been again regretted that  
we did not know about the  
Neck apartment, as we had  
been greatly liked to have had

a little word to Sate from  
you our lips. - You know  
how vividly recalled walks  
taken 40 years ago in

Bright - We have your collected  
papers, which were kindly sent  
us by Mr Conway, but  
have not yet had time to  
read them. I occasionally  
glance at little news of you  
in the Index; & within the  
last hour have read with  
interest an article of yours  
on the progress of Free Thought.

Believe me, my dear Sir  
With sincere admiration

Yours very faithfully

C. Darwin

This note being written  
as usual, so you do  
not trouble yourself  
to acknowledge it.

graphs" certainly gives us the best delineation of that extraordinary man, unsurpassed even by that remarkable account of his later life in James's "William Wetmore Story and his Friends." No one enjoyed more than Lord Houghton the Florentine legend that Landor had, one day, after an imperfect dinner, thrown the cook out of the window into his violet-bed; and, while the man was writhing with a broken limb, ejaculated, "Good God, I forgot the violets!" Another remark attributed to Landor, who liked to dine alone, when he said that a spider at least was "a gentleman, for he ate his fly in secret," was by no means to be applied to the hospitable soul of Lord Houghton.

Lord Beaconsfield has described Lord Houghton, under the name of Mr. Vavasour, as one who liked to know everybody who was known, and to see everything which ought to be seen. "There was not," he says, "a congregation of sages and philosophers in any part of Europe which he did not attend as a brother. . . . He was everywhere and at everything; he had gone down in a diving-bell and gone up in a balloon." Carlyle called him the "President of the Heaven-and-Hell-Amalgamation Company," and Matthew Arnold wrote of him to his mother, during the Chartist Riots of 1848, that Milnes refused to



be sworn in as a special constable, in order that he might be free to assume the post of President of the Republic at a moment's notice. He had known more authors of all nations than any Englishman of his day, probably; yet his comments on them, especially in later time, now and then suggested the reply of Samuel Rogers to some one who described the members of a distinguished literary fraternity as being like brothers: "I have heard they were not getting on well together, but did not know that it was quite so bad as that." I remember, too, Lord Houghton's comment when I described a brief interview with Tennyson, how he frankly said of his Cambridge companion and lifelong friend, "Tennyson likes unmixed flattery." The same limitations affected all his criticism; and while vindicating Keats in his "Life," Milnes could not help hinting that the Lake Poets marred their "access to future fame" by "literary conceit," thus suggesting toward the poetry of others the same injustice which threatens his own. Yet the present writer, at least, who learned Milnes's poems by heart in youth, and found in "Sister Sorrow" and "Beneath an Indian Palm" something second only to Tennyson, must still retain love for the poet, as well as gratitude to the ever kindly host.

Low thought presents his  
thanks to Col. Higginson  
& believes it for to thank  
him for the handsome volume  
of ~~Harvard~~ Biographies -  
containing names that Europe  
has learned to know and  
will do well to imitate

W. Upper Brook N. -  
March. 20th 1867.



Next to Lord Houghton, perhaps, in cheery cordiality to Americans, was the late Aubrey de Vere (1814-1902), whose smallness of size and poetic face seem to substitute him in place of Tom Moore as the typical representative of the Irish poetic spirit. His name alone seemed to impair the genuineness of this Irish quality, but it was borne before him by his father, Sir Aubrey de Vere, Bart., of Curragh Chase, County Limerick; the family name having been originally Hunt, but having been changed by royal license many years ago to the family name of the old earls of Oxford, a race with whom there was a remote connection. The name of the later poet of this family — for the father also had published poems — was well known in America, where he had at several times contributed to the "Atlantic Monthly" and other periodicals; and also it was gratefully known for that sympathy in our national cause which he had freely expressed in two sonnets of high grade, the one called the "Principle," and the other "Principle a Power, or Logic a History." He had already written, before the Civil War, two sonnets touching on the same theme and addressed to Professor Charles Eliot Norton; and throughout all these poems he had recognized the abolition of slavery as the great need of our nation. In yet later verse,

he had become more and more thoroughly identified with the revival in Irish tradition, and, like most of his fellow bards, had sung of Queen Meave, of the sons of Usnach, and of the Children of Lir. Himself latterly a Catholic, he needed but little effort to speak for Ireland's heroic age, as he himself loved to call it.

Sir Leslie Stephen tells us that de Vere was one of the most delightful of men, and he speaks truly; but when he goes farther and informs us that he himself has never read a line of his charming friend's poetry, it is uncertain whether he is casting doubt upon this friend's intellectual claims or his own. Many of de Vere's minor verses have in them a touch amounting almost to genius; and perhaps no great national sorrow was ever more nobly preserved in song than was accomplished in the "Hymn in Time of Famine," in Ireland. These verses appeared first in a magazine, anonymously, and were at once attributed to Tennyson, nor could Tennyson have surpassed them. They were of themselves sufficient, like Kipling's "Recessional," to make a reputation; and that Sir Leslie never took the pains to read them shows that he could not safely have risked the reputation of his "Dictionary of National Biography" on his own unguided judgment. All else that is claimed by him for

Aubrey de Vere was absolutely true, and we may add that this poet had all the charm of the Irish temperament, combined with a sweetness and gentleness not always identified with that heroic island, while all its pathos and sorrow were incarnated in him. Supposing England and Ireland to have become separate nations, it would have been by no fighting on his part, although he would have accepted the result; and many an English heart, warm beneath its seeming coldness, would have looked from the windows of the Athenæum Club, vainly hoping for his return at the accustomed season. That famous club must indeed seem as essentially transformed by not meeting him in the reading-room as by discovering that Herbert Spencer is no longer knocking billiard balls about in the basement.

De Vere's published recollections, although somewhat too diffuse, especially in dealing with his "submission" to the Catholic Church, — an event which did not occur until he was nearly forty, — are yet full of delightful pictures of home life, with many touches of that racy Irish humor which was a part of his inheritance. In the narrative are intermingled some anecdotes of Wordsworth, who was his father's literary model; and he tells an amusing story connected with the ruins of Kilchurn Castle



in Scotland, to which Wordsworth addressed an early and now forgotten poem. It seems that, while still a boy, de Vere was requested to read from Wordsworth to two ladies, his mother's friends, and he began at this poem, reading in a solemn voice:—

“Skeleton of unfleshed humanity,”

on which one of the two ladies, who was, he says, certainly as thin as a skeleton, leaped up and said, “Well, I *am* the thinnest woman in Ireland, but I cannot approve of personal remarks.” Another good story of his telling is that of a groom in Dublin Castle, who was required to attend a Protestant service at the opening of court, in which the chaplain prayed that all the lords of the council might always hang together “in accord and concord.” At which poor Paddy forgot where he was, and exclaimed at his loudest, “Oh, then, if I could see them hanging together in *any* cord, 't is myself would be satisfied!”

Thomas Hughes (1823–96), too, is gone,—Tom Hughes would still seem the more accustomed name,—one of the many men who illustrate the somewhat painful truth that the heights of philanthropy and self-devotion do not yield so sure a fame as a spark of genius,



THE TRUMP CARD



however wayward it may be. When he came to this country in 1870, he was justly received as the one man who, more than any other, had served as the main tie between Americans and Englishmen at the darkest hour of civil war. His single testimony in his parting address convinced America, for the first time, that the English antagonism which cut so deeply during the war was really the antagonism of a minority, and that the vast mass of Englishmen were on our side. More than any other witness, he convinced us, moreover, that war between America and England under any conceivable circumstances would be essentially a civil war, and that we never again should see such a war between English-speaking men. Perhaps no address made on this side the Atlantic during, or immediately after, our Civil War afforded such a triumph of international influence as that made by him at Music Hall in Boston, on October 11, 1870, and printed in his "Vacation Rambles." His immediate service to us in England during the war itself had certainly prepared the way for this, and doubtless his whole American prestige dated back to the period when his "Tom Brown's School Days at Rugby" found its way to all boyish hearts. In 1880, it will be remembered, he was here for the inspection of certain colonies

which he had founded for young Englishmen of the more educated class, at Rugby, Tennessee. Personally, I met him several times in England in a very pleasant way, but had seen him first in this country, when I exerted a doubtful influence over his personal comfort by guiding him to Spouting Rock in Newport just before an inhospitable wave came up "like a huge whale," as he says in his printed diary, deluging him completely, while sparing me. "The sight," he says, "was superb, and well worth the payment on an unstarched coat and waistcoat."

Philip James Bailey (1816-1902) not only achieved the distinction of being rarely mentioned, save in connection with a single book of his authorship, but of being actually dismissed from life nearly fifty years before his real departure, by the highest historic authority, the "Konversations-Lexikon" of Brockhaus, where he who runs may read that Bailey died in 1858. "Festus" had, indeed, the strange experience of being largely written before its author was twenty years old,—of being compared on its first appearance to the works of Homer, of Virgil, and of Goethe,—of having passed through eleven or more editions in England and thirty or more in America, grow-



ing bulkier and heavier as it went on,— and of being at last practically forgotten, with its author. The book itself undoubtedly owed something of its success to the mood of the public mind at the time of its first appearance. It was printed in the transcendental period; it was long-winded, sometimes imitative, often feeble, and yet rising in single passages into strong lines and regal phrases, suggestive, at least, of Marlowe and of Keats. The young poet's very conception of literature is on its stateliest side:—

“Homer is gone : and where is Jove, and where  
The rival cities seven? His song outlives  
Time, tower and god — all that then was, save Heaven.”

Some of his lines have had the highest compliment paid them by drifting into the vast sea of miscellaneous literature, and reappearing, from time to time, assigned to any one of a dozen different authors, as in case of that fine passage:—

“Trifles like these make up the present time;  
The Iliad and the Pyramids, the past.”

It is testified by all who recall the period of the first appearance of “Festus” that the book distinctly tended to the training of ardent and even heroic souls; and if the author himself belonged to that class, he certainly could not



have felt, at eighty-six, that he had lived in vain.

The death of Alexander J. Ellis (1814-90) took away one of those men of ready and versatile powers who seem more American than English in temperament; and he was one who perhaps strengthened this impression by his faithful allegiance to our fellow countryman, Mr. Conway, whose Sunday services he attended in London. After distinguishing himself successively in the higher mathematics, the theory of music, horse-taming, and phonology, — having, indeed, been a fellow laborer with Sir Isaac Pitman in forming the phonetic alphabet, — he was, when I knew him, the president of the Philological Society, and one of the most agreeable of companions. While frankly critical of so-called Americanisms in conversation, — declaring, for instance, that he had rarely met an American who habitually pronounced the name of his own country correctly, inasmuch as they almost all said Ame'ica, — he was as yet by no means narrow or autocratic. When I asked him, for example, how he pronounced the word "either," — that is, *ether* or *ither*, — he laughed and said that it made no difference, but that he sometimes said it in the one way, sometimes in the other. Upon this

his daughter, a lively maiden, broke in merrily and said, "Oh, but I think that such a useful word! It reveals a person's age by the way he pronounces it. Everybody in England under forty says 'e-ther,' and every one over forty says 'i-ther.' So surely as I hear a man say i-ther, I know he is above forty, no matter what he pretends." Then we talked of Americanisms, and Mrs. Ellis said that it had always seemed odd to her — since Americans were so cordial and sociable and the English were justly regarded as stiff — that it should, nevertheless, be Americans who addressed every newcomer as stranger, "or strahnger," she added, when English people would more naturally say "My friend." When I defended my fellow countrymen against the charge, and described the offending epithet as belonging to the newer and more unsettled parts of the land, she said with surprise that she had always been told that we addressed every new acquaintance with "Well, strahnger, I guess." I got the advantage of her a little, however, when we came to talk of railway travel. She inquired if it was true, as she had been told, that American railway conductors often stopped the trains in order to drive stray cattle off the track. I did not feel called upon to tell her that I had seen this done in my childhood, when

the first railways were built, within a dozen miles of Boston, but I explained that it might still be done, sometimes, in the great farming and grazing regions of the country, were it not that we had a contrivance in the shape of a frame built out in front of the locomotive to guard against that danger. This valuable invention, I told her, was known as a "cow-catcher." She listened with deep interest, and then asked with some solicitude, "But is it not rather dangerous for the boy?" and I inquired in some bewilderment, "What boy?" "Why," she answered, "the boy of whom you spoke, the cow-catcher!"

The death of Doctor Jowett, Master of Balliol College, Oxford (1817-93),—whom it was the proper etiquette to address as "Master,"—recalls associations dear to American students because of his marvelous translation of Plato, with others, only less admirable, of Aristotle's "Politics," and of Thucydides. To me, personally, it also brings back the happy Commemoration Day at Oxford in 1878, when I sat at his dinner-table with the present Duke of Devonshire, Sir James Stephen, and others, and heard that singular mixture of sermonizing and sharp retort which is so well preserved in the brilliant pages of Mallock's "New Repub-

lic." He appears there, it may be remembered, as "Dr. Jenkinson," and preaches an imaginary sermon which, it is said, annoyed the subject of the parody very much. Many are the stories yet told at Oxford of his abrupt and formidable wit. On one occasion, at one of his own dinner-parties, when the ladies had retired and a guest began at once upon that vein of indecent talk which is, perhaps, less infrequent among educated men in England than in America, or is at least more easily tolerated there, Doctor Jowett is said to have looked sharply toward the offender, and to have said with a decisive politeness, "Shall we continue this conversation in the drawing-room?" He then rose from his chair, the guests all, of course, following, by which measure the offender was, so to speak, annihilated without discourtesy. They tell also, at Balliol, of a dinner at Doctor Jowett's table, when the talk ran upon the comparative gifts of two Balliol men who had been made respectively a judge and a bishop. Professor Henry Smith, famous in his day for his brilliancy, pronounced the bishop to be the greater man of the two for this reason: "A judge, at the most, can only say 'You be hanged,' whereas a bishop can say 'You be damned.'" "Yes," said Doctor Jowett, "but if the judge says 'You be hanged,' you *are* hanged."

London seemed to me permanently impoverished, when I went there last, by the death of one of its most accomplished and most delightful women, Lady Pollock, mother of the present Sir Frederick Pollock, who has lately visited us in America, and also of Walter Herries Pollock, former editor of the "Saturday Review." With the latter, she published "A Cast of the Dice" under the pen name of "Julian Waters" in 1872, and "Little People and Other Tales" in 1874; and ten years later she published from her own pen "Macready as I knew Him." This is perhaps the most admirable sketch ever written of a great actor, and suggests more of ripe thought and observation about the dramatic profession than any book I have ever read. Of the stage itself she was an expert critic, being as much at home in Paris as in London, and being sometimes expressly summoned across the Channel by members of the Théâtre Français to see the preliminary rehearsal of some new play. Her husband, the second Sir Frederick, — the present baronet being the third, — was a most agreeable man, of tall and distinguished appearance and varied cultivation. It was at his house that I first had the pleasure of meeting two attractive guests, Mr. Venable, then well known as a writer for his annual summary of events in the London



“Times,” and Mr. Newton of the British Museum. The former read aloud, I remember, some of the brilliant “Leading Cases” of the present Sir Frederick Pollock, a book of satirical imitations of leading poets; and I have always associated Mr. Newton with the remark, which any person largely conversant with great libraries can understand, that on Sundays, when he went into the British Museum and wandered about among the empty halls, he found himself absolutely hating books.

There still remain to be mentioned two men, the one Scotch, and the other what may be called English-American, whom I met at a London dinner-table under rather odd circumstances, nearly thirty years ago. It was at the house of an eminent American journalist then residing in London, an old acquaintance, who had done me the kindness to invite a few friends to meet me at dinner. This being the case, I was placed at table, according to custom, on the right of the hostess, and saw on her left a very tall, strongly built man of intelligent and good-natured look, but with an overpowering voice, soon bearing down on all others with hearty vehemence and jocund anecdote. He seemed like one who might consort with a hundred wandering gypsies, and lord it over them



all. On my side of the table sat, with one lady between us, a man much younger and widely different in appearance, having the look of a small and rather insignificant Jewish salesman. He was, as my hostess explained to me, a young Scotch journalist, who had won quite a reputation by a novel called "A Daughter of Heth." His name, then wholly new to me, was William Black (1841-98), while the other and more stalwart neighbor was Charles Godfrey Leland (1824-1903), of whom I knew something by his earlier writings. As for Black, I had heard of his book, but had not read it, and I remember that, after the ladies had withdrawn, I moved my chair so as to come nearer to him, and made some attempt at starting a conversation, which altogether failed, as his attention still clung, not unnaturally but exclusively, to Leland, who went on telling uproarious stories. Abandoning my effort at last, I turned to some one else, and after a while we returned to the drawing-room. It was getting late, and I had promised to take home in my carriage a daughter of Horace Greeley, also a guest; and while talking with our host about this plan, Mr. Black rather surprised me by coming up and proposing quite eagerly that our host and myself should go with him to his club and finish the evening. This the former declined, because he

could not leave his guests, and I, because of my escort duty toward the young lady. I was a little amazed at this rather tardy attention on Mr. Black's part, after my previous ill success in winning his ear; but it was soon necessary to take leave, with my young companion, who, as soon as the carriage door was shut, burst into a merry laugh and said, "I have had such an odd time with that Mr. Black." It seems that he had sat down beside her on our return to the drawing-room, and had remarked to her that she, being an American, was probably acquainted with all the persons present. She replied that, on the contrary, she knew very few of them. "Then I can tell you," he said, "who some of them are. That," he said, "is an American author whom we are invited here to meet," and he pointed to Mr. Leland. "No, it is not," she said. "You are entirely mistaken. I know the gentleman of whom you speak very well, and that is an entirely different man, Mr. Leland." The key was now given to the young author's sudden cordiality toward a stranger. But what surprised me was that he should have looked on the left side of the lady of the house, not on the right, to find the guest for whom the dinner was given. It appears from his recent memoirs, however, that although Black had then spent half a dozen years in London,

he had had at first but little experience in its social life, and may have needed elementary instructions in its ways almost as much as I myself did, although I was doubtless visiting the Old World, as my friend Madame Th. Bentzon has suggested, somewhat in the inexperienced capacity of Voltaire's Huron Indian.

## XII

### UNA HAWTHORNE

IT has never happened to me, during a life of many years, to walk in the streets of a city with any companion by my side who has attracted, from passing strangers, such ready personal notice, followed by eager scrutiny, as was usually won by Una Hawthorne, the elder daughter of our great literary artist. Tall beyond the average height of women, absolutely erect, perfectly unconscious, bearing her fine head upon the body of a gymnast, she herself kept no account of the eyes resting upon her, or of the heads that were turned to watch her as she swept by. It was this nobleness of carriage which first arrested attention, and her superb Titianesque coloring which afterwards held it,—the abundant hair of reddish auburn and the large gray eyes. I knew her at one time intimately, being, under a certain combination of events, in a manner adopted by her, as a sort of brevet relative. This paper will be drawn largely from her own letters, but will include also a careful study of her in childhood by her father.

It is not easy to find a more picturesque account of the early married life of two people of genius than is given in Mrs. Sophia Hawthorne's letters and journals during her frugal winter at the Old Manse in Concord. Take, for instance, this passage, as reprinted in her daughter Mrs. Lathrop's "Memories of Hawthorne:" "Lately we go on the river, which is now frozen, my lord to skate and I to run and slide, during the dolphin-death of day. I consider my husband a rare sight gliding over the icy stream. For, wrapped in his cloak, he looks very graceful, perpetually darting from me in long, sweeping curves, and returning again—again to shoot away. Our meadow at the bottom of the orchard is like a small frozen sea now, and that is the present scene of our heroic games. Sometimes, in the splendor of the dying light, we seem sporting upon transparent gold, so prismatic becomes the ice, and the snow takes opaline hues from the gems that float above as clouds. It is eminently the hour to see objects, just after the sun has disappeared. Oh, such oxygen as we inhale! Often other skaters appear—young men and boys—who principally interest me as foils to my husband, who, in the presence of nature, loses all shyness, and moves regally like a king. One afternoon Mr. Emerson and



Mr. Thoreau went with him down the river. Henry Thoreau is an experienced skater, and was figuring dithyrambic dances and Bacchic leaps on the ice — very remarkable, but very ugly, methought. Next him followed Mr. Hawthorne, who, wrapped in his cloak, moved like a self-impelled Greek statue, stately and grave.”<sup>1</sup>

It is still more beautiful indoors: “In the evening, when the astral enacts the sun, and pours shine upon all the objects, and shows, beneath, the noblest head in Christendom, in the ancient chair with its sculptured back [a chair said to have come over in the Mayflower, and owned by the Hawthorne family]; and whenever I look up, two stars beneath a brow of serene white radiate love and sympathy upon me. Can you think of a happier life, with its rich intellectual feasts? That downy bloom of happiness, which unfaithful and ignoble poets have persisted in declaring always vanished at the touch and wear of life, is delicate and fresh as ever, and must remain so if we remain unprofane” (p. 64).

But this life becomes far more beautiful when the eldest child, Una, appears upon the scene. It is not, perhaps, much to claim for this newcomer when we are told that “her grandmother says she has the most perfect form

<sup>1</sup> *Memories of Hawthorne*, pp. 52, 53.



she ever saw in a baby;" or when the young mother writes, "She waked this morning like another dawn, and smiled bountifully." Have we not all had grandmothers and mothers? It counts for a little more to say, "I took her to William Story's yesterday, and he thought her eyes very beautiful, and said he had scarcely ever seen perfectly gray eyes before; and that such were the finest eyes in the world, capable of the most expression. He added that her eyes were like those of an exquisite child of Raphael's which he had seen in oils." Elsewhere Mrs. Hawthorne writes to her mother: "I never imagined anything so enchanting as Una's rapid development. Every morning, as soon as she is awake, she extends her little hand to the Madonna. Then she points to Loch Lomond, . . . and then to Abbotsford, each time observing something about the pictures as she gazes into my face. My replies I always feel to be very stupid, but I do as well as I can, considering that I am not now a baby."

Afterwards, when they are living in a little house in Lenox, Mrs. Hawthorne writes to her mother on a rainy Sunday of her two elder children — Julian having now arrived: "This has been a dull 'heaven's day' for the children, who have not been as merry as on a

sunny day. I have read to them, and shown them my drawings of Flaxman's Iliad and Odyssey and Hesiod. I wish you could have seen them the other day, acting Giant Despair and Mrs. Diffidence. They were sitting on chairs opposite the doorsteps; Julian with one little leg over the other, in a nonchalant attitude; Una also in negligent position. They were discussing their prisoners, Hopeful and Christian, in very gruff and unamiable voices, 'Well, what had we better do with them?' 'Oh, beat them pretty well, every day!'

On another Sunday she writes: "A famous snow-storm. I read from Spenser to the children in the morning of St. George and Una, Una and the Lion, and Prince Arthur. Then Cinderella. They made an exquisite picture with the hobby-horse. Julian was upon the horse — as a king; Una at his side presenting ambrosia."

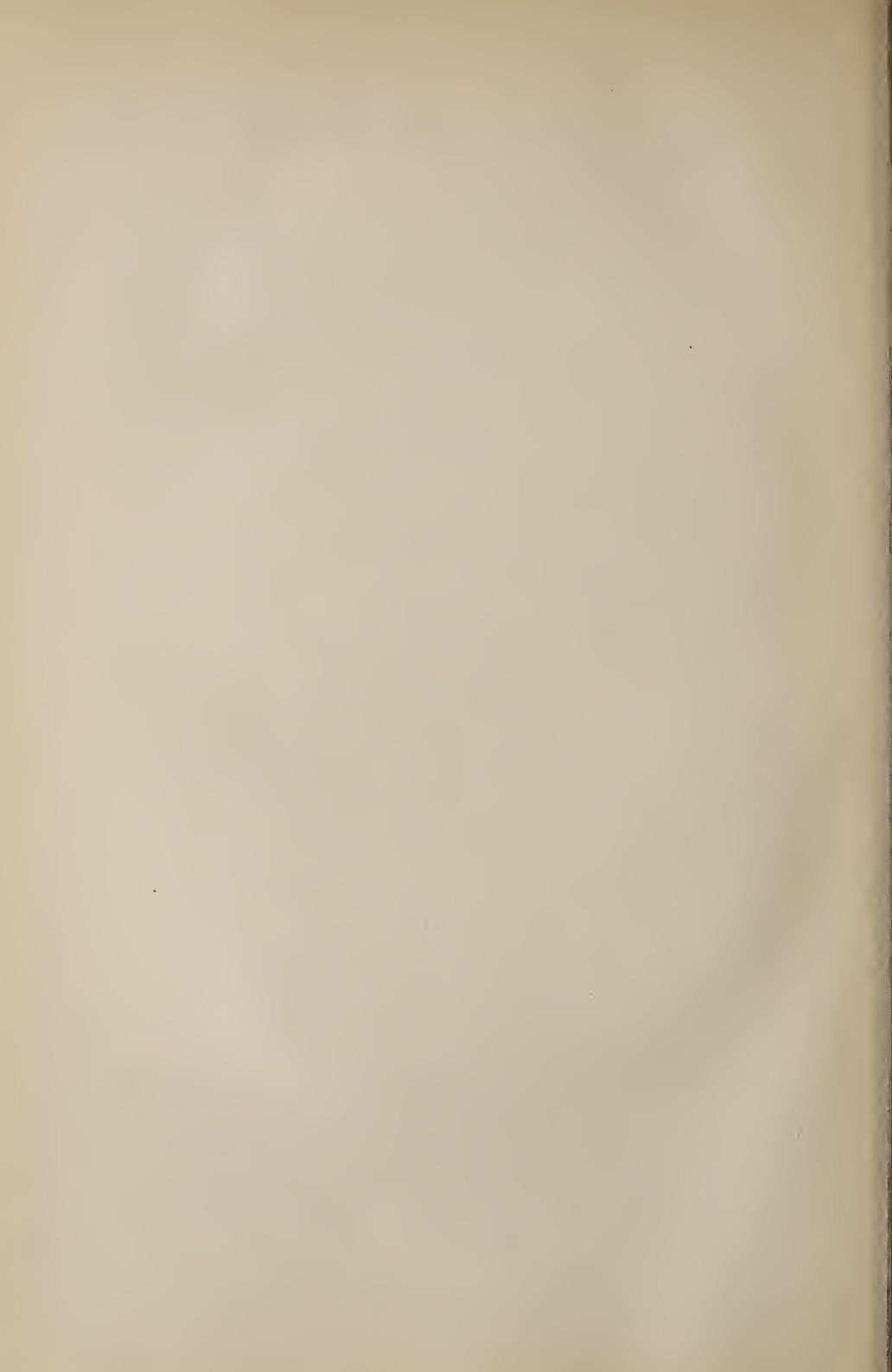
Later we learn how the daughter's nature grew in proportion to her intimacy with her father. The mother writes: "Dear little harp-souled Una — whose love for her father grows more profound every day, as her comprehending intellect and heart perceive more and more fully what he is — was made quite unhappy because he did not go at the same time with her to the Lake. His absence darkened all the

sunshine to her ; and when I asked her why she could not enjoy the walk as Julian did, she replied, 'Ah, *he* does not love papa as *I* do !' But when we arrived, there sat papa on a rock, and her face and figure were transfigured from a Niobe's to an Allegra's instantly. . . . I heard her and Julian talking together about their father's smile, the other day. They had been speaking of some other person's smile — Mr. Tappan's, I believe ; and presently Una said, 'But you know, Julian, that there is no smile like papa's !' 'Oh, no,' replied Julian. 'Not like *papa's* !' "

How well this corresponds with what the daughter once said to me in later years of her father ! "He was capable of being the very gayest person I ever saw. He was like a boy. Never was such a playmate as he in all the world." And while the child was thus living in an atmosphere of pure romance with the father, he was at the same time studying and analyzing her in the minute and anxious way seen in the following sketch of Una, a copy of which was given me many years ago by Mrs. Hawthorne, and was never before, so far as I know, put in print. It is of itself deeply interesting, even apart from its subject, as showing the minute personal observation which its author habitually applied to the few human types



UNA HAWTHORNE



with which he came very closely in contact. Nothing else, as it seems to me, gives such a glimpse from original sources of the manner in which this shy and reticent man pursued his observations:—

“There is something that frightens me about the child. I know not whether elfish or angelic, but at all events supernatural. She steps so boldly into the midst of everything, shrinks from nothing, has such comprehension of everything, seeming at times to have but little delicacy, and anon shows that she possesses the finest essence of it; now so hard, now so tender, now so perfectly unreasonable, soon again so wise. In short, I now and then catch an aspect of her in which I cannot believe her to be my own human child, but a spirit strangely mingled with good and evil, haunting the house where I dwell.

“Una, I think, does not possess humor, nor anything of the truly comic; she cannot at all bear to be laughed at for anything funny that she perpetrates unawares, and when she tries to be funny, the result is seldom anything but an eccentricity— a wild grimace— an unnatural tone; her natural bent is towards the passionate and tragic. Her life at present is a tempestuous day, with blinks of sunshine gushing between the rifts of cloud. She is as full,



oftentimes, of acerbity as an unripe apple, that may be perfected into mellow deliciousness hereafter. She has a very strong craving for sympathy, and yet a hundred times a day she seems to defy sympathy, and put herself in a position where she knows she cannot receive it.

“ Her beauty is the most flitting, transitory, uncertain, and unaccountable affair that ever had a real existence. It beams out whenever nobody expects it; it has mysteriously passed away when you think yourself sure of it; if you glance sideways at her, you perhaps think it is illuminating her face, but, turning full to enjoy it, it is gone again. When really visible, it is rare and precious as the vision of an angel; it is a transfiguration, a grace, a delicacy, an ethereal fineness, which at once, in my secret soul, makes me give up all severe opinions that I may have begun to form respecting her. She is never graceful or beautiful except when perfectly quiet — violence, exhibitions of passion, strong expressions of any kind destroy her beauty. Her voice, face, gesture, every manifestation in short, becomes disagreeable. One night in spring I asked her to come in and go to bed, for it was after six o'clock. ‘ Where is that six o'clock? Papa, I do not know where it is. Oh! I know where it is! It is in *God's day*,

with all the other sixes that have been.' Once she broke forth in a chant — 'Oh God! wrongness never reigns.'

"She is not likely ever to be run away with by her imagination — her perception of reality is constantly on the watch.

"Julian said, 'God is the most beautiful of Princes.' Una rebuked him and said, 'No, Julian, God is a King.'

"Una says, 'I am tired of all things and want to slip into God.'

"Her auburn curls come down over her face, and as to her delicate little phiz, its spirit, grace, and sensibility elude the pen that would describe it.

"On my reproving Julian, Una comes to me with a remonstrance of no small length, the burthen being, 'Papa, you should not speak so loudly to a little boy, who is only half years old.'

"She comes out of trouble like the moon out of a cloud, with no shadow of sulkiness hanging about her — or rather, perhaps, like a rose-bush out of a thunder shower, for there is a sort of dewy softness remaining, although there is the brightness of sunshine in her smile."

Let us now pass by twenty years or more, until this fair child has grown to maturity, and read one of her letters written from the house

of my sister at Brattleboro, Vermont, where Una was making a brief visit. I do not see how her father himself could have touched the very freshness and fullness of outdoor life with a pencil more delicate:—

BRATTLEBORO, VT., May 19th, '68.

I am fresh from the beautiful damp woods, with all their wealth of budding green and tender flowers, and, absurd as it seems to try and tell you about them, I really can't help it. When did it ever seem as if there had been another springtime, or as if a violet or a wind-flower had been seen before? The glory of it all makes me almost afraid, and it seems such a pity ever to come home from such an exquisite fairy-land.

Aunt Anna and I had planned a walk when I first came, but it has rained constantly; however, to-day we bid defiance to the rain, so it respected our bravery and our umbrellas, which we were punished by having to carry under our arms.

Such a depth and richness of green was brought out by the dampness that I would not have had it a dry day for the world, and indeed I must have been born with a spring in my mouth instead of a silver spoon, for I always feel twice myself in a showery ramble.

I wanted to go straight up the perpendicular bank behind Mrs. Brown's house, and Aunt Anna's enterprise at least equaled mine, and we were fully rewarded. The rocks were almost wholly veiled by delicate mosses and lichens, in which were planted violets, houstonias, and anemones, and new ferns undoubling their green fists, with polygalas, saxifrage, and, to my great joy, columbines. The last has always had a magical fascination for me, and makes me feel as no other flower can. It represents the aristocracy among wild flowers, with its haughty and airy grace and proud crimson and gold. It not only "the likeness of a kingly crown had on," but it is itself a crown.

There was a peculiar half moss, half lichen on the rocks, looking like large green ears, and with this I lined the bottom of my basket, intending to cover the earth in Aunt Anna's flower-pots with it. Then the flowers showered in, mixed with long trails of partridge-vine with its bright red berry. I pulled up a royal plant with all its nodding columbines by the roots to put down by that huge stump in the garden, where the simple thing does n't know but it is at home. Then we penetrated into the delicious woods, wishing for you . . . at every step. Oh, why are n't you here? I can't bear to enjoy it all without you, when you want



it so much; and should we not find beautiful secrets together in these deep recesses?

The trees were mostly tall, slender pines, many of them thrusting their twisted roots out of the ground, and others fallen all their length, making bridges and arches, and holding up a huge shield of roots at the end. The busy moss had wrapped them all in its soft green, and had lined and draped a thousand green recesses, making me wish I was a fairy to live in them. Surely, man has never built a mansion that is arrayed like one of these!

It was a most Gothic wood, with its pointed trees and arches, and long vistas inviting us onward. How impossible it seems that a wood path can ever have an end!

At last we saw water gleaming at a distance, and came to a clear tarn, lined with brown leaves and holding a fair picture in its bosom. A short distance from this was a cavernous spring that delighted me extremely. The opening was oblong, lined with the natural rock and stones for a depth of some five feet, and then it was excavated under the earth, or rather the rock, and there we saw the water bubbling, clear and cold. What a place for summer, and how one envies the frogs! But these seemingly endless woods had an end, and we came out on some open rising ground,

whence we had a glorious view of the valley, where the trees were already dreaming of summer, and sketching an outline of their greenness.

Luminous mists, "slow-dropping veils of thinnest lawn," took the place of the sunshine, making a pearly radiance in the air, and the far blue mountains made an exquisite horizon.

And here the world came upon us, in the shape of two small children, a girl with some columbines in her hand, and a boy with some plebeian dandelions. "I say, you give me some of yours," said the boy, "and you shall have *all* mine!" "No, I don't want yours," said the girl, airily skipping down the bank. "Oh, you're *stingy!*" said the boy, as he followed her, with an accent of the most supreme contempt.

Then we came home, and I think you might wish yourself either one of your pictures if you want to have a good time. Before one [picture] is a little basket, lined with moss and filled with tiny ferns, violets, anemones, houstonias, and polygalas, and many more. Under the other is a tall vase with a long partridge-vine twisted round it, and filled with columbines, uvularias, and slender branches of delicately tinted maple leaves mixed with white flowers and ferns. I enjoyed arranging them very much, but oh,



how dead and colorless my letter seems! How I wish I had a little bit of the secret of nature to put into it! But that secret hovers near me in the air, it vanishes among the leaves and whispers in the flower bells, and though I cannot grasp or utter it, I feel as if in time it might make me beautiful with its peace.

I find in turning over her letters that most of them refer to private affairs which I am not at liberty to touch, but there are two of her European letters which may be printed. It must be borne in mind that she first went abroad with her parents as a child, being first in England and then in Italy, and then, after the death of her father in 1864, she went abroad with her mother, who died in London in 1871. The following letters were written during this absence:—

DRESDEN, April 19th, 1869.

DEAR —, — I am very glad to hear from you at last, for I began to fear that your wee farewell note was the last of our correspondence, and could not wonder that many more important and pleasant concerns put it out of your head. But I see I am favored beyond my deserts, and I find this much pleasanter than being treated with strict justice. . . . I have been delighted to hear of your housekeeping

and its happy results. If I came to see you in winter, you would not put me in a room that had never known a fire, with a feather-bed and one blanket, and a small pitcher of ice-water, would you? Well, I am sorry I can't have that shivery experience of Newport cancelled, though I don't believe I should ever be warm there, in the midst of summer. . . . Any old friend would be welcome to me now. As to new ones, I abominate them — or rather the idea — for I have n't made any. The doors of my heart are shut, I believe, on the short and precious number already inside, and it is not common to meet fascinating specimens of one's country-people abroad. We live apart, in a quiet, independent way, and only occasionally hear a murmur of the detestable gossip and lavish fashion on the other side of the river, or see a glimpse of velvet trains. . . . The Sistine Madonna and I (was my name ever so associated before!) are very glad you are coming to Europe, and we hope the *but* we involve will not fail to bring you to Dresden. Really and truly, you must not go back without coming here, and I think you would find yourself fully repaid, for the interests and charms of this city and its environs are very great, and surely you would not consider your tour complete unless there was a streak of German

through it. The spring, as we find, is so specially lovely here that I hope you can time your visit then — or at any rate not in winter, for I suppose the remarkable winter we have just passed will not soon repeat itself. And even this winter we have had gales of wind that make the Newport ones seem like mere whispers, and which shook the ponderous stone mansion in which we participate so that we began to feel there was no stability in material things.

I like my German life very well, and I think Europe is a delightful place for women. I should except the present typical woman of America, I suppose, as much as I would a young man with a fortune and a career to achieve; but I am not a typical woman of that kind, nor do I delight in them. I like, now at least, the intellectual, artistic, dreamy atmosphere, and the sort of easy independence one can enjoy here. It would be a selfish life when there was a choice of any other, but I do not feel that it is for me, because the duties incumbent on me I can fulfill as well here, and gild them over a little, besides. At home I saw only the rugged fact — here I lose sight of it sometimes in pictures and music and loads of flowers. Still, I am a very subdued person, and realize how the years have fled, and what

they have brought me, as this return to European life brings vividly before me my happy, enthusiastic girlhood, brimming over with undimmed hope and trust and love; when, too, my father's smile was the sun in my heaven. So near, and yet so far it all is, and I think I shall be gayer by and by when the force of the contrast wears off.

It isn't canonical to cross letters, even from this side of the Atlantic, I suppose, and though I always feel a wicked desire to do it, I will spare your eyes and say good-by. . . . I am so glad you think you can write to me sometimes; I hope you really will, though I can do little more than love you in return, and that I should at any rate — so, you see, you don't gain anything.

January 28, 1870, DRESDEN.

DEAR —, — I was very glad to get your letter after such a long silence. I thought I should care less and less to be remembered by my friends when I got out here, but I find it very much the contrary, and all the galleries and music in Europe can't make up for one's friends. Indeed, I don't believe I am very artistic after all. Of course I always knew I had no talent to accomplish anything, but I did think I had latent seeds of appreciation, and perhaps they would come to something if I

was not among these stolid, dirty Germans, who disenchant one of all ideas of beauty, and make one doubt if there is such a thing as spirit. However, we shall certainly be here till next autumn, and I hope you will find it possible to come here. When I hear how short your absence is to be, I see you will have to leave out a great deal. I don't believe anybody ever tried to accomplish even the beaten track of European travel in four months, though it has been profitably done in six, and when you are once over here it seems a pity not to draw a breath. I am extremely surprised your eyes were holden that you should not see the frequent recurrence of that unlovely letter "U" in the Italian part of Mamma's book. It is such an eyesore to me that on first glancing over the book it seemed to stare from every page, but in the English portion it of course does not occur, because that is taken from letters to me, as I was always left at home.

We see very few American books, except the "Atlantic" and "Putnam's," which come to us regularly, but it seems to me they are not as good as they used to be. Won't you write another story? I have not read Lowell's "Cathedral" yet, because I was so generous as to lend the magazine before reading it. I expected to like it, for I admire a great deal of



his poetry very much indeed. I think "Under the Willows" contains exquisite things, and to read his pictures from the Shoals is almost as good as going there — better, in one sense, because it is such a satisfaction to see put into words what you thought was beyond them. How wonderfully expressive language can be made, after all, and what a glorious instrument it is! And I am quite content with English — "my little jaws were never made" to tear themselves to pieces with German monstrosities — I never should talk it fluently if I lived a thousand years. I have had the little photograph I inclose for you this great while — I always want to send you all the lovely child-pictures, and I think this is very sweet. Perhaps I shall be able to show you the real one now, which is very beautiful in coloring. It is too late for your birthday, but that is your fault, because you never told me the date before.

I am afraid I shall never be able to write anything worth putting in your paper, but if I should ever come across any interesting facts about women that nobody ever heard of before, I will put them at your disposal. The Saxon woman is a dull and ponderous specimen, whom the man holds not even "better than his horse," I am afraid; certainly the poor ones



are made to work much harder, for they are absurdly tender of their miserable old horses, putting drags on their wheels when the earth is scarcely dreaming of an eminence, and sometimes getting a woman to push behind when a hill is to be climbed. I have no opportunity to observe the better classes, but it is said the same principle runs through all. But Germans like to have American wives, and treat them better, I suppose, because they won't put up with anything else; but I can't conceive of such a thing as marrying an unadulterated Dutchman.

Mrs. [Helen] Hunt must write charming letters, she is so vivid and brilliant herself. I heard she was coming to Dresden, and hope it may be true—it seems to be the fashion for every one to come here. You know——made a short visit here. She seemed to have only half enjoyed her trip, and to think it a hard fate to go home. Poor thing, she sailed in such awful weather that I was almost afraid she would never see the other side; but she said she thought it would be rather good fun to be drowned, and I suppose that was a talisman.

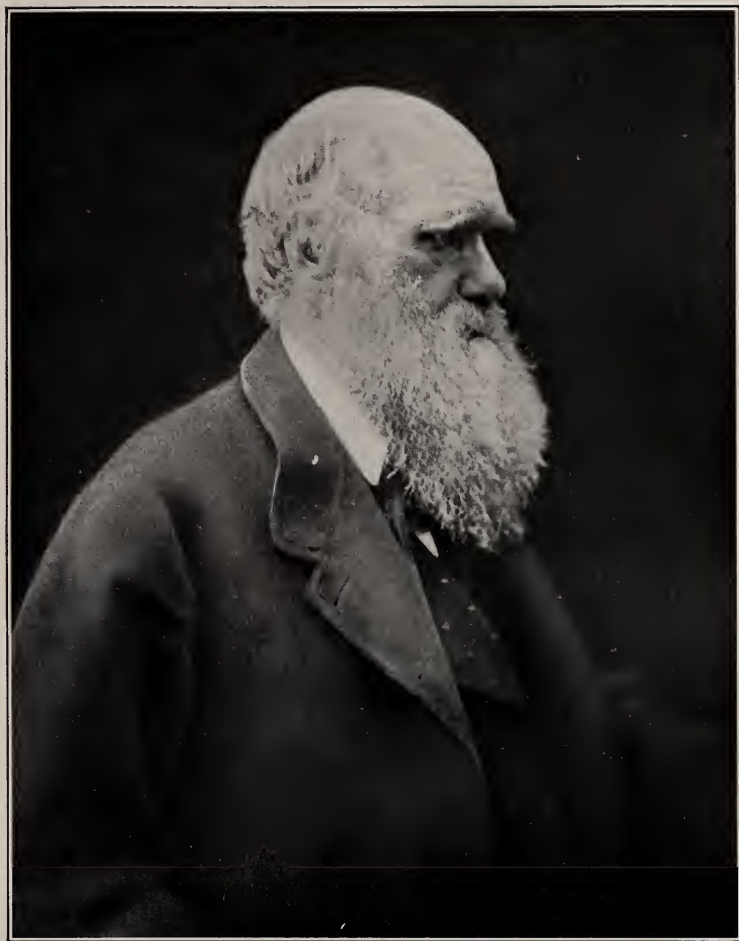
After breaking off an early engagement which ended unhappily, Una Hawthorne was

betrothed in later life to a young man of fine gifts and literary pursuits, Albert Webster. He proved, however, to be in consumption, and was soon ordered to Honolulu for his health, but died on shipboard and was buried at sea. This occurred on December 27, 1876, and his betrothed did not hear of it until several months later. She died on September 10, 1877, at Clevee, England, apparently of a broken heart.

I can do no better, perhaps, than to close this imperfect sketch of one of the rarest types of character I have ever known by a final summary of her qualities, written many years since by my elder sister, a woman of unsurpassed truthfulness and penetration, with whom Una had been closely associated during the formative period of her life:—

“About Una I wish I had ——’s power of saying anything in the way of characterization. She was very peculiar; you were sure she had genius, though I do not think I ever saw any writing of hers that seemed remarkable. Her qualities were very inconsistent; she would tell you every particular of circumstances that had occurred to herself, and yet you did not feel you understood how she felt; she was not transparent, though very confiding; wanting in judgment and perception of character

and easily influenced, though she seemed self-reliant. . . . She was excessively fascinating; her father's description of her looks is perfectly appropriate; sometimes she seemed beautiful, then entirely the reverse. . . . She was ardent and generous always, as I knew her; the religious phase came to her afterwards — that is, in a technical way; she was ever high-minded, but did not seem as spiritual as her mother. It was impossible she should ever be happy."



CHARLES ROBERT DARWIN



### XIII

#### HISTORY IN EASY LESSONS

NOTHING gives to a calm observer, on the whole, more respect for children than their apparent dislike to the study of history. Nor does anything oftener impress one with the unreasonableness of parental demands than the efforts to force history by main strength into childish minds. The father comes home from his office or his workshop with a large volume done up in a parcel, and says hopefully to his little son, "Here, my boy, is the first volume of Bancroft's 'History of the United States.' You will enjoy reading it very much, and when you have got through with it, there are six more just like it!" Then the father settles himself down to his daily "Herald," and the mother to "The Smart Set," feeling that all their parental duty is, for the moment, done. Far more just and equal was the proposal of a little girl of my acquaintance, who suggested to her favorite aunt to join her in a spelling match, and stipulated that they should "start fair." On inquiry as to her standard of fairness, she



replied after a moment's reflection, "You shall spell Nebuchadnezzar, and I will spell cat; that will be starting fair."

We have discovered long since that every child is a born naturalist, but every child knew long before the arrival of Darwin that the most interesting of all animals is Man. One may see on any hillside in the country the open hole of a woodchuck, with sticks of various lengths lying round it, showing where the village children have vainly sought to explore the depths of that mysterious sheltering-place. But there was never one of those boys who was not ready to leave his explorations at a moment's notice on seeing a party of two or three men coming up the other side of the hill with spades and pickaxes evidently intent on digging a larger hole for an unknown purpose, and perhaps for the cellar of some human woodchuck's abode. Never yet was a boy seen who did not enjoy the "Swiss Family Robinson," but history written as it should be is all Swiss Family Robinson. Every girl takes pleasure in what is called at country fairs "A Centennial Tea Party," but history properly arranged is a series of just such parties. Instead of preferring fiction to truth, every child, if fairly treated, likes the truth. His dogs must actually bark, his cats actually mew. I once knew a profes-

sor's little son who had been brought up with every indulgence except the personal possession of a cat. Vainly had he pined for this crowning experience, till at last, on making a visit to a friend, he was lifted at once to the highest point of enjoyment by being introduced to a fine specimen of the feline race in full vigor. Shutting himself up in the room with it, he proceeded to try experiments in natural history, and when the cat tried the household by its wails, and a maid was hastily sent in to withdraw it, the child implored, "Ah, please, please, don't take it away; this is the most best noise I ever saw a cat do!" A similar taste for reality belongs to every youthful mind.

Is this treating the great cause of human education with too much levity? Yet its great local pioneer in the United States was Horace Mann, and the fundamental grammar of his science was to be found in his very first lecture on "The Means and Objects of Common-School Education," in 1837. In this he says, "Allow me to premise that there is one rule which in all places and in all forms of education should be held as primary, paramount, and, as far as possible, exclusive. Acquirement and pleasure should go hand in hand. They should never part company. The pleasure of acquiring should be the incitement to acquire. . . . Nature has

implanted a feeling of curiosity in the heart of every child, as if to make herself certain of his activity and progress." This he elsewhere follows up by a graphic description of a boy in school drooping sleepily and hopelessly over his lesson, and the same child five minutes after, when the recess bell has rung. It is perhaps his first lesson in a new game; all his faculties are on the alert; he learns as if by magic where to stand, when to run, whither to run, when he is "in," when and where he is "out," how to count the successes or failures on his side, in short, a harder ordeal than the whole school morning has furnished indoors, and yet he calls it play. It may be truly said that the basis of the whole public school system of the United States is to be found in those early observations by Horace Mann. He it was who first pointed out that, in the active mind of a child, whatever is understood interests, and whatever interests is remembered.

It is a curious fact that Dr. Samuel Johnson, who was in his day generally regarded among English-speaking people as the supreme authority on all intellectual questions, held that "great abilities were not requisite for an historian." "In historical composition," he said, "all the greatest powers of the human mind are quiescent. He has facts ready to his hand;

so there is no exercise of invention. Imagination is not required in any high degree; only about as much as is used in the lower kinds of poetry. Some penetration, accuracy, and coloring will fit a man for the task, if he can give the application which is necessary." It is hard to take seriously a dogma so whimsical, yet it is a further fact worth noticing that the famous Dr. Thomas Guthrie in Scotland, who was said to have educated more men for the Christian ministry, a hundred years ago, than any other living preceptor, divided his training into three departments somewhat analogous to Johnson's "penetration, accuracy, and coloring." These three Dr. Guthrie called "proving, painting, and persuading," and they were known among his pupils collectively as "the three p's." His far-off correspondents, indeed, would frequently be reminded of them by a postscript at the end of a letter from Dr. Guthrie to this effect: "N. B. Remember the three p's." Let us consider these elements of all knowledge.

1. The basis of all knowledge, historical or otherwise, consists doubtless in a sufficient number of proved facts, this number being of course dependent on the temperament of the person concerned. There is on one side the time-worn tradition that "a little learning is

a dangerous thing." Yet I remember, on the other hand, that I met, while connected with the Massachusetts Board of Education, a teacher possessed of such remarkable knack at passing examinations that he literally never failed in the process; and on my asking him his secret, he replied that it lay in the fact that he had less of general knowledge, not more, than most of his competitors, the result being, as he said, that what he knew, he knew. Like this was, in some degree, the example of Wendell Phillips, whose use of historical allusion in public speaking was singularly effective, and who was wont to attribute it all to the fact that he had mastered one thing thoroughly in history, the period of the English Revolution. Personally, I can recall but three public speakers whose store of facts seemed to me absolutely inexhaustible, these three being John Quincy Adams, Theodore Parker, and Louis Agassiz; their treasures in this respect lying in three different directions, but seeming alike endless. With the mass of men, however, it is unquestionable that one fact drives out another, and it is doubtful if the most learned person carries in his mind more details of knowledge when fifty years old than he carried at twenty. It is only that he carries different things. The great lawyer, for instance,



obliged to retain in his memory all the minutiae of the most complex case, with the liability of hopeless defeat should one fact drop out of place in the chart of his mental voyage, may very likely have to enter on another case by wholly forgetting the first one. He can no more carry it all with him than he can carry the knowledge by which he perhaps graduated *summa cum laude* from college ten years before, as for instance chemistry, or the differential calculus. Still less can he rival his own little girl, whom he may perhaps hear through the piazza window reciting to her mother the rules for knitting her new bedspread. "Cast on 41 stitches. 1st row, knit across plain; 2d row, slip 1, purl 19, purl 2 together, purl 17, thread over, purl 2; 3d row, slip 1, knit 19, knit 2 together, knit 17, over, knit 2; 4th row, slip 1, purl 19, purl 2 together, purl 17, over, purl 2; 5th row, slip 1, knit 19, knit 2 together, knit 17, over, knit 2;" and so on through the rest of the lesson.

2. Granting that history must thus begin with a limited number of facts, offered simply as facts, we come to Dr. Guthrie's second intellectual department, which he describes as "painting." This may offer the additional charm that it presently takes us into the department commonly called "light reading," or



still lighter conversation. It is said of Sydney Smith that when visiting his parishioners in their farmhouses and taken at once into the hopeless decorum of the best parlor, he would walk to and fro, flinging open the windows and exclaiming, "Glorify the room! Glorify the room!" Give the child some variety; if it be only that achieved by an old black man among the freed slaves in war times, who first taught his pupils to say the alphabet, and then, having attained to the limit of his own knowledge, taught them to say it also backwards. Every person who has had much experience with children knows that the stupidest child develops plenty of vivacity when talking about what interests him. When standing up in recitation, he may seem hopeless, but wait till recess time, and hear him describe a casual dog fight, or a glimpse into a circus, or even that historic occasion when the schoolroom stove got red-hot and singed the teacher's overshoes, and we have Homer's Iliad in a nutshell. I well remember that, when just out of college, I was intrusted with the pleasing task of showing Flaxman's "Illustrations of Homer," then a novelty, to a young girl who was reputed to be fond of reading, and that I pointed out to her the inferiority of Flaxman's horses to their riders. "Such thick necks," I added critically;

upon which she remarked with the proper humility of a young woman for whom there were as yet no colleges, "But did not the Thesalian horses have those thick necks?" Upon this the pride of Harvard sank defeated. Alas, I could write verses in Greek hexameter, but I did not even know that it was in Thessaly that the Greek riding-horses were bred.

Detail, the animation of detail, is what the young student needs. How inconceivably stiff and dreary seems to many a child the early Puritan life in New England, until he comes across some casual anecdote from which it suddenly flashes upon him that those formal clergymen had a human side. "Holy Mr. Cotton," for instance, how remote and unapproachable he seems, until the fact suddenly comes into view, that this good man was pacing homeward in Boston, wrapped in his Geneva cloak, pondering on his next Sunday's sermon, when some "street boys" passing by—so the legend says, but can it be that there were "street boys" in those days?—were heard to whisper among themselves, "Let's put a trick upon old Cotton." Upon which one boy, more daring than the rest, ran up behind him and shouted in his ear, "Cotton, thou art an old fool!" "I know it, I know it," shouted the old gentleman suddenly, "the Lord make both thee and me

wiser," and then reverted to his meditations. Whole pages of fact committed to memory had left the life of that time still dull and mechanical, but this single incident revealed to the schoolboy a human side.

A still more striking illustration of the changed point of view in which George Washington is now regarded is to be found in the fact that all this wider intelligence dates back to a single passage introduced by Washington Irving in a footnote in a very small print at the bottom of a page in the third volume of his memoirs. Four or five biographers had preceded Irving in their narrations, Ramsay, Marshall, Weems, Sparks, and the elder Bancroft; yet not one of them had ventured to concede for an instant that the Father of his Country was capable of laughter. Irving at last dared to recognize this possibility, and, having once done it, could not restrain himself from telling how Washington was once so amused, while in camp, at a story told by one of his young lieutenants, that he not only laughed, but was actually seen to roll on the grass, over and over, to get to the other end of his laughter. Fancy the situation! Six feet and three inches of Father of his Country, rolling over and over on the sod in the ineffectual effort to finish that laugh. What a trivial and almost

despicable fact this seemed, as forming a part of that great man's career! Yet it is only since that discovery that Washington became to his fellow citizens not only the Father of his Country, but a fellow man. At the present day it would be difficult to find a country school-teacher so remote that he would think it morally wrong to admit that the first American President was capable of laughing.

3. Dr. Guthrie's third department, that of "persuading," now shows itself in the higher form of freedom of discussion, such as prevails more and more universally in all our public high schools, where Jew and Gentile, Catholic and Protestant, are encouraged to search subjects for themselves, the pupil simply looking toward the teachers as presiding officers in the debate. There could hardly, for instance, be a finer example of this than in the classes in American history which I once saw conducted by that fine teacher and well-trained author, the late Alice Wellington Rollins. When I said to her, "You could not, of course, go through the period of the Protestant Reformation in this way?" she replied that there was no period so interesting and successful, in her experience. Her class, she said, was about equally divided between Catholic and Protestant; the girls in succession brought out all they knew, and

then, for want of ammunition, begged to have the debate adjourned until the next week, when they would come back with their cartridge-boxes replenished. In answer to my inquiry "if either side converted the other," she replied, "Probably not," but that perhaps they lived all their lives holding their own view in a larger spirit, as understanding the points at which honest minds could differ. The same principle applies still more to later questions, as to those resulting from the Civil War, where it is undeniable that the children of each great party can do more justice to the others' point of view than would have seemed possible immediately after the contest. The same result is found with still different cases. When consulting with that gifted teacher, Jane Andrews, as to the topics that should be included in a school history I was just then writing, I hinted somewhat drearily, perhaps, at the hopelessness of making the early Colonial charters clear, or even intelligible, to very young classes, and she at once set any such fear aside, saying that there was nothing which her pupils, girls of twelve or thereabouts, followed up with more ready interest than those very charters. It was not long after when her widely famed book, "The Seven Little Sisters who Live on the Round Ball that Floats in the Air," reached



these very sisters so thoroughly as to be translated into Japanese and Chinese.

Now it hardly needs to be pointed out, as we go farther on, that all these little rules and maxims which apply to the child apply also to the veteran historian. Its proving, its painting, its persuading, must be the same to him. Coleridge said that the dullest writer could write an interesting book if he would but relate the events of his own life with honesty, not disguising the feelings that accompanied them.<sup>1</sup> All depends, after all, on the teacher, and even that teacher has his inspired moments. It is a curious fact that those men of genius who have done the most to recognize the picturesqueness of our earlier American life were the very men who at the outset were troubled by the theory that it was tame and commonplace; as in the case of Lowell, who complained that the details of New England history were essentially dry and unpoetic; and Hawthorne, who had maintained that the same period furnished only "a dull routine of commonplace prosperity; no picturesque and gloomy wrong."

The vast rapidity with which studies in history, and especially in American history, are multiplying every day can only recall to us the fact that the professional historian, like the

<sup>1</sup> *Quarterly Review*, xcvi, p. 456.



professional lawyer or physician or poet, was only developed by degrees in our American society. In Virginia the early leaders were planters; in the New England Colonies they were clergymen; and all other intellectual leadership was done by this class, or not done at all. There was no distinct class of lawyers in Massachusetts, at least, before 1701; and even then they were simply admitted as attorneys, with no examination and no study required. One favorite Boston attorney, for instance, was a quick-witted tailor, others were merchants. Attorney-General Bullivant was an apothecary. A few men had been trained to the bar in England, but even those were liable at any moment to have their plans interfered with by clergymen who came into court, expressed their minds, and often carried the day. Among others in the courts there was no courtesy and no deference. There was jury trial, but it happened sometimes, when a juryman stood out against the rest, that he was refused food and starved into compliance. The court bullied the counsel and were treated without respect by the bar. One day when a poor old woman came hobbling into the court-room and found no seat, the lawyer who had summoned her as a witness bade her go up on the judges' bench, which she innocently proceeded to do,

and the lawyer, when reproved, replied that he thought that place was "made for old women." The first English-bred lawyer who set himself up as an attorney, Thomas Lechford, in 1637, was allowed but one case and then forbidden to practice; and Jeremiah Gridley, called "the father of the Boston bar," came to it about 1730. Out of all this chaos, order was evolved in time. But it is a remarkable fact that the three leaders most conspicuous in the early days of the Revolution, John and Samuel Adams and Oxenbridge Thacher, were all originally destined for the church, the family of Samuel Adams objecting to his becoming a lawyer because it was not considered an altogether respectable profession.

None of these careers would be likely, as we can now see, to train the historian, and when the higher training arrived, it came in the purely classic form and hindered as much as it helped. The late Professor Henry W. Torrey told me that he, Charles Sumner, and Wendell Phillips used to learn by heart at the Boston Latin School whole books of Virgil and Homer in the original, and recite lessons from them without referring to the text. There were still cultivated families where the gentlemen of the house would cap verses, as it was called, by the evening fireside. Public oratory was measured

by just such formal standards. We have in the diaries of Rev. John Peirce the precise measurement of the length of orations and poems at Harvard Phi Beta Kappa meetings for many years; no address, he shows us, had exceeded fifty minutes down to 1824, when Edward Everett, then in his early glory, went up to one hour and fifty-one minutes.<sup>1</sup>

So vast and complex are the developments of modern history, it is quite certain that no American scholar of high standing would now treat with any respect the belittling statement of Johnson as to the gifts required of an historian. The criticism now belongs rather on the other side as to the permanence or final quality of the work. The late Justin Winsor, who was recognized by almost all as the chief among our American historians, always pointed out with sadness that even a vast specialist like Parkman — the one striking instance among us of one who chose his life career in college days and never swerved from it — would inevitably be superseded as time went on by the man of later knowledge; as we already see, indeed, in the case of Parkman, that he underrated from the outset the claims of the Indians on the imaginative side, and did not keep up with the later observations. Even Rufus Choate,

<sup>1</sup> *Massachusetts Historical Collections*, ix, p. 119.

50 Chestnut St

Boston,

4 April '77

My Dear Higginson,

Going yesterday  
afternoon to Jamaica  
Plain, I found the  
"American Explorer", which  
makes a most attractive  
little book, not only for  
young folks, but for  
their elders. Many thanks  
for your kind remembrance  
yours very truly

F. Parkman



when he turned from his forensic triumphs, and said, "After all, a book is the only immortality," left the problem unsolved, for he did not tell what that book should be; and no one ever met the fatal possibilities of that ordeal. Voltaire perhaps solved the problem more nearly than Choate, for Voltaire laid it down as a maxim that nothing can be more difficult than to be obscurely hanged.



## XIV

### THE COWARDICE OF CULTURE

THERE is," said George William Curtis, in an address at Concord, "a cynicism which fondly fancies that in its beginning the American republic moved proudly toward the future with all the splendid assurance of the Persian Xerxes descending on the shores of Greece, but that it sits to-day among shattered hopes, like Xerxes above his ships at Salamis. And when was this golden age?" His hearers might well have answered Mr. Curtis by saying that this cynicism is of no modern origin, but dates back to the very foundation of the government. Thus Alexander Hamilton wrote on February 27, 1802, to his associate, Gouverneur Morris: "Mine is an odd destiny. Perhaps no man in the United States has sacrificed or done more for the present constitution than myself; and contrary to all anticipations of its fate, as you know, from the very beginning. I am still laboring to prop the frail and worthless fabric. . . . Yet I have the murmurs of its friends no less than the

curse of its foes for my reward. What can I do better than withdraw from the scene?"

Fisher Ames, perhaps the most brilliant American statesman of his time, said six years later than this, just before his death in 1808, at the end of his lecture on American literature:—

"The condition of the United States is changing. Luxury is sure to introduce want; and the great inequalities between the very rich and the very poor will be more conspicuous, and comprehend a more formidable host of the latter. . . . Liberty has never yet lasted long in a democracy; nor has it ever ended in anything better than despotism. With the change of our government, our manners and sentiments will change. As soon as our emperor has destroyed his rivals and established order in his army, he will desire to see splendour in his court, and to occupy his subjects with the cultivation of the sciences."

Those who have won the fight for the sake of good, as they fancied, have to recognize that all may not turn out in their favorite way. In 1775, when John Adams came back from Philadelphia after the Convention had organized the army and appointed its generals, he met in Quincy a horse-jockey who had been his client, and who said, "Oh, Mr. Adams, what great

11

things you and your colleagues have done for us. We can never be grateful enough to you. There are no courts of justice now in this province, and I hope there never will be." Sad were Mr. Adams's reflections when he thought that perhaps, after all, such men as this might be in the majority. And Mrs. Colonel Smith, his daughter, after dining with several members of Congress at New York in 1788, wrote to her mother, "If you had been present, you would have trembled for your country to have seen, heard, and observed the men who are its rulers. Very different they were, I believe, in times past." Yet nearly fifty years later than this, in 1835, Chancellor Kent wrote of Judge Story, "He says all sensible men at Washington, in private conversation, admit that the Government is deplorably weak, factious, and corrupt. That everything is sinking down into despotism under the guise of a democratic Government." In the same year Miss Catharine M. Sedgwick, who stood for many years the acknowledged head of our women authors, testified with the keen sight of a woman to the same attitude of mind in those about her. "The Federalists believed that all sound principles, truth, justice, and patriotism, were identified with the upper classes." "They hoped a republic might exist and prosper, and be the happiest

government in the world, but not without a strong aristocratic element; and that the constitutional monarchy of Britain was the safest and happiest government on earth, I am sure they believed. . . . I remember my father, one of the kindest-hearted of men, and most observant of the rights of all beneath him, habitually spoke politically of the people as 'Jacobins,' '*sans-culottes*,' and miscreants. He — and in this I speak of him as the type of the Federal party — dreaded every upward step they made, regarding their elevation as a depression, in proportion to their ascension, of the intelligence and virtue of the country. The upward tendencies from education and improvements in the arts of life were unknown to them."

That the same view prevailed among all the conservative class in England showed itself clearly enough on the publication of Hamilton's "Men and Manners in America," whose moral was thus summed up in "Blackwood's Magazine" for September, 1835: —

"In Europe, the ascending intellect and increasing information of every successive generation, have long been conspicuous; and society has exhibited for three hundred years the animating spectacle of each successive generation being more elevated and refined than that which preceded it. But that is far from being

the case in America. There the degrading equalizing tendency of democracy is daily experienced with more deplorable effects; and instead of the lower orders ascending to the intelligence and elegance of the superior, the better order of the citizens are fast descending to the level of the labouring classes. Each successive generation is more coarse, and less enlightened, than that which precedes it. . . . America, Mr. Hamilton tells us, exhibits this painful spectacle."

It was, moreover, such lamentations which greeted Harriet Martineau when she came to America about this same time. "The first gentleman who greeted me on my arrival in the United States," in 1834, she tells us, "a few minutes after I had landed, informed me without delay, that I had arrived at an unhappy crisis; that the institutions of the country would be in ruins before my return to England; that the levelling spirit was desolating society; and that the United States were on the verge of a military despotism. . . . At Washington, I ventured to ask an explanation from one of the most honoured statesmen now living; who told me, with a smile, that the country had been in 'a crisis' for fifty years past; and would be for fifty years to come." Miss Martineau is gone, and so, doubtless, is



her Washington friend and adviser. But he has left a numerous family of descendants, and newly landing foreigners are still liable to meet them on the wharf.

How are we now to interpret this prolonged series of illustrations of what may justly be called the cowardice of culture? It is always to be borne in mind that the whole period I have been describing was a profoundly serious one, and that the buoyant element which in these days relieves itself from over-solicitude by a bonmot or an anecdote had not then come in. Among the whole circle of the Federalists, for instance, I can find no repartee which seems really modern, except that reported to me by the only genuine Federalist whom I knew personally, James Richardson ; a saying, namely, of my grandfather, Stephen Higginson, at a gathering of the Federalists, in their days of defeat, at the house of George Cabot in Brookline. After a good deal of dreary lamenting, my grandfather had at last the audacity to suggest to them that if it became necessary to dwell in the same house with a cat, it would not do invariably to address the obnoxious animal as "cat;" sometimes you must call her "pussy." There was, however, scarcely an occasion where such a remark would not, in those days, have been thought to savor of



levity; and if we are to treat the whole thing as an historic situation, it must be more seriously approached.

The simple fact is that every extension of suffrage terrifies every community of voters. Every class of men, when first enfranchised, is distrusted by the class which it threatens to outvote. Nothing is more amusing in view of our modern standards of social gradation than to see the slow manner in which the mercantile class has come to social position. The original charter of Delaware reserved all powers of government to a royal council, because, as it said, "Politics lie beyond the profession of merchants." Dr. Samuel Johnson himself, who admitted that much might be made of a Scotchman "if he be caught young," and that he was willing to love all mankind "except an American," could never attribute any social standing to a merchant. But if the merchant was thus long distrusted, how much more the mechanic classes, when their turn for political emancipation came, in a period nearer to our own!

"It is pleasant," said the agents of James II sent with Governor Andros to Boston, "to behold poor cobblers and pitiful mechanics, who have neither home nor land, strutting and making noe mean figure at their elections, and

some of the richest merchants and wealthiest of the people stand by as insignificant cyphers." Thus in Delaware the merchant was distrusted; in New England the mechanic. Yet in each case the distrusted class carried the day; and the Revolution, which in Virginia and Pennsylvania was the work of the landholders, was in New England the work of the people. The men of wealth and standing who took the side of liberty were so few that they could be counted; it was carried through by the masses.

On looking backward, at this length of time, we can see the needlessness of all these fears. I take it that there was never a period in our history since the American nation was independent when it would not have been a calamity to have it controlled by its highly educated men alone. John Randolph used to point out that in the Bible the Book of Kings succeeds the Book of Judges, and the anti-slavery leaders had reason to fear the same. Edmund Quincy well said that during the long anti-slavery agitation, "the strength of the movement was in the masses. The presidents of colleges would at any time have voted for compromise." I remember, too, when Kossuth at Faneuil Hall reminded his hearers that "when the battle of Cannæ was lost and Hannibal was

measuring by bushels the rings of the fallen Roman squires, the Senate of Rome voted thanks to Consul Terentius Varro for not having despaired of the republic."

If it sounds like mere extravagance to say that the many may be wiser than the few, we must remember that the mere word "common-sense" implies the same assumption; and so in regard to morals, the masses of the American people are doubtless more critical as to morality than any exclusive circle. Mr. Bronson Howard tells us that a Bowery audience is far quicker than a fashionable one to hiss anything really immoral in a play. Howells, always penetrating, and commonly accurate, selects a rough Californian as the man who voluntarily patrols a sleeping-car to be the self-appointed protector of the ladies. A solitary girl may travel from the Atlantic to the Pacific and meet with less of real rudeness than she might encounter in the later hours of some fashionable city ball. Americans who have lost their character at home have sometimes made a great social success in London; and even at Newport or Lenox, one may see behind an unimpeachable four-in-hand men and women of whom it can by no means be said, as Mark Twain said of Queen Victoria, that they are "eminently respectable and quite the sort of person whom

one would be willing to introduce into one's family."

If this is true in important matters, it is still more true of trivialities of dress and demeanor. Take, for example, the use of the hat. In that well-known authority, Pepys's "Diary," which is held as an infallible record of the manners of its period, we find, under date of September 22, 1664, "Home to-bed; having got a strange cold in my head, by flinging off my hat at dinner, and sitting with the wind in my neck." So in Lord Clarendon's essay on the decay of respect paid to age, he says that when young he never kept his hat on before those older than himself, except at dinner. He died in 1674. It is well known that the English members of Parliament sit with their hats on during session, and the same practice prevailed at the early town meetings in New England. Thus do manners begin with the many rather than the few, and only hold their own longest amid the most exclusive circles. In the same way we may often see morality itself best exemplified in the manners of the many.

Why, then, should it be the classes of so-called culture that set us the example of terror, as society develops year by year? The man supposed to occupy a humbler social position has no such feeling of alarm,— he sees his own

organizations of workingmen enlarging; the rights of labor recognized; legislature after legislature passing laws in his behalf. He saw, moreover, a year ago, the President of the nation chosen on the largest vote ever known, as the outcome of popularity and confidence. Had the dozen richest men in this country joined in a solemn pledge to defeat Mr. Roosevelt, we now see that they could not have done it. Surely, it cannot be this fact on which the cowardice of culture is based. The scholar, at least, cannot share this terror. It is rather for him, by wider training, to become a leader of men.

It is a source of joy, not of peril, that every social sphere has its own standard of judgment, neither birth nor wealth nor knowledge nor virtue monopolizing this. A friend of mine, a Boston merchant, was being rowed on the Racquette River in the Adirondacks by a guide who had been highly recommended to him, but who proved very silent. At last the oarsman found a tongue, and said casually to his passenger, "Do you know Jimmie Lowell?" Supposing this to be one of the boatmen on the lakes, my friend disclaimed all knowledge of such a personage. "I should think you would know him," returned the boatman with some surprise. "He teaches in



Harvard College, and writes poetry and such things." "Ah, indeed," said my friend, surprised. "I know Professor Lowell, and have known him for many years." "Do you?" said the guide, and then fell back into silence, which was broken by the remark, some ten minutes later, "Ignorant cuss, ain't he?" It appeared that he had rowed Lowell on that same river for some hours, earlier in the previous season, keeping always on the sunny side, and that Lowell pleaded with him to row over to the shady side, for it never occurred to him that a boatman must consider the current, not the shade. The different standard in tastes and faculties will never be determined by money only.

Still less, at least in America, will it be controlled by birth. Long before I had ever visited England, I was driving a young Englishwoman of rank, daughter of a baron and daughter-in-law of an earl, to visit the old abode of Dean Berkeley in the vicinity of Newport. I naturally improved the opportunity to learn something of the ways of high life in another country, and asked the question, which had often occurred to me, whether the best English society was not liable to be made monotonous by being largely filled up by birth alone, thus losing something of the wholesome variety of



American life. This she answered in the negative, on the ground that the very abundance of families of the higher grade made it impossible to receive them all at any one time; and in making a selection, it was easy to invite guests or friends who had no social rank whatever, but perhaps turned out the wittiest or most agreeable of the whole company. On the other hand, she said, there were families of the very highest grade who lived almost wholly at their country-seats, rarely came up to London for any length of time, and then were passed by. "I know lots of dukes' daughters," she carelessly said, "who get scarcely any attention." She was herself, at that time, very young; she came to this country largely to visit Vassar College, then a novelty; and made so hearty an acquaintance with American reformers that she named her daughter, born after her return from America, Lucretia Mott; she was, moreover, a most entertaining companion, and did not hesitate to tell an American hostess, when needful, that any particular dish on the table was "nasty," or any insufficient argument used by the host was "bosh." Mere birth, like mere wealth, fails to make even the manners infallible.

If all the scholar's education in a republic gives him no infallible advantage over the man

Southborough,

7<sup>th</sup> Dec:

My dear Higginson,

Many thanks for your kind letter. I too have been hoping that I might meet you, & still hope

As for Thursday evening, I must say no. I am obliged this week to spend Tuesday & Wednesday nights in Boston & to come down again on Saturday. I must come back hither on Thursday afternoon in order to have Friday at my disposal. Moreover I have nothing about Tourgenieff - unless my meeting him once in Paris be leaving something. I have never read one of his books.

Faithfully yours

Colonel Higginson.

S. M. Bowdler



who cannot read or write, let the scholar have the manliness not to whine over the results of his own inefficiency. How absurd would be any artificial system of equalization, such as we sometimes see gravely urged, which should give to the day laborer one vote, to the school-teacher two, to the lawyer or editor three, and to the author of a treatise on the United States Constitution ten! Natural laws provide much better for the end desired; the education of the editor, the lawyer, the teacher, should enable him to carry dozens of less educated votes at his belt, as an Indian carries scalps. It is he who writes the editorials, he who makes the speeches; all the machinery of conviction, for good or for evil, is intrusted to his hands. The political committee-man is the quartermaster of the regiment; he attends to the supplies and the encampment, and if he neglects his duty, the work is ill done. Eating is essential to fighting, in the long run; but eating can never take the place of fighting; and the tone of the political campaign must be given by those who actually contend. "The glory of universal suffrage," said Louis Blanc to me once, "is in the power it gives to intellectual leaders; a man of trained intellect really throws not one vote only, but a thousand."

All this being true, the nation has surely the

right to demand of its educated men that they should not evade and apologize, but should show some faith, not only in their principles, but in their training and in themselves. Robespierre said that power without virtue was crime, but that virtue without power was weakness. Power naturally demands its own exercise, has faith in itself, and claims success, not by intrigue or manœuvre, but by manly self-assertion and having eyes to discover every open door. The hand of the ignorant man puts in the ballot, but it is the tongue of the educated man which guides him, first or last. If this is not accomplished, it is for want of force. After all, eloquence simply represents force, something to say, and the fewest words possible to say it in. Lincoln's speech at Gettysburg and John Brown's at the scaffold are still our high-water mark of American eloquence, though England perhaps rivals them in Lord Chatham's "America has resisted. I rejoice, my lords!" a passage which was pronounced by the great Irish orator Grattan to be equal to anything in Demosthenes.

If, now, the strength of society lies more, after all, in the many than in the few, and if that multitude is best stirred by individual leadership, and if that leadership is found best in the best educated, why should the prospects





COLONEL GEORGE E. WARING





of the world be formidable? The history of all great reforms points this way, but let me draw my moral from what might at first be called a minor instance. It seems but a little while since I was called to the door of my lodging-house at Newport to meet, as it seemed to me, the very handsomest and most prepossessing man who ever stood on a doorstep. It was just at the end of the Civil War, and he had been discharged, with the cavalry regiment which he had commanded, from Frémont's Mountain Department, and was about to establish a large market-garden near Newport. It ended in his getting such prices for his butter as Newport had never before heard of, and this was done by one who, as a frank and manly social favorite, went everywhere, and was equally popular with men and women. It mattered little to him whether he drove up in his market wagon to the back door of some stately house to settle with the housekeeper some question of new-made butter, or rode upon his fine Kentucky race-horse in the afternoon to make a party call upon the mistress of the estate. By and by, he developed wholly new theories of drainage, and turned his attention to that perplexing problem, taking contracts in that direction more and more widely. Meantime the great city of New York, with

which he was well acquainted, was beginning to struggle with a problem akin to drainage, the cleansing of its streets. In a happy hour, he was called there, and undertook with delight something in which everybody else had failed. As a first stroke, he proceeded, amid universal derision, to clothe in a white uniform his whole corps of street-cleaners, and it was not until he had driven into disappearance the vast legion of piled-up barrels and tilted carts which had collected the dirt of every street by night, and had marched his white-clad workmen in military order down Broadway by day, that all New York waked to the discovery that it had found a master, and that his name was George Waring. Thus does every reform lie latent in the public mind until that public finds a leader; one of whom it can be said, as Carlyle said of Scott, that "when he departed, he took a Man's life with him."

## INDEX



## INDEX

- ABOLITIONISTS**, American, the, meetings of, 17-19; on negro, 119; also, 21, 115, 117, 128.  
 Adams, President John, 285, 289.  
 Adams, President J. Q., 276.  
 Adams, Samuel, 285.  
 Æschylus, 162.  
 Agassiz, Louis, on insects, 189; also, 27, 105, 129, 276.  
 Alcott, A. B., 4, 23, 25; character, 14, 15.  
 Alcott, Louisa, 31.  
 Allibone, S. A., 173.  
 Alsop, Richard, 175.  
 Ames, Fisher, 289.  
 Andersen, Hans Christian, 42.  
 Andrew, Gov. J. A., 122.  
 Andrews, Jane, 282.  
 Andros, Governor, 294.  
 Archer, William, 67.  
 Aristocracy of the Dollar, the, 93.  
 Aristophanes, 163.  
 Arnold, Matthew, sadness of, 24; on the English, 50; on learning, 159.  
 Arnold, Dr. Thomas, 206.  
 Association of Western Literary Societies, 77.  
 Astor, J. J., 99.  
 Atlantic Monthly, the, 73.  
 Audiences, English and American, 73.  
 Augustine, St., quoted, 168-170.  
 Austin, Mrs. Sarah, 166.  
 Bacon, Lord, 49.  
 Bailey, P. J., 226, 238.  
 Balzac, Honoré de, 164.  
 Bancroft, George, 9.  
 Barbauld, Mrs., 210.  
 Bayley, T. H., 199.  
 Beaconsfield, Lord, 206, 232.  
 Beck, Prof. Charles, 9.  
 Beecher, Rev. H. W., 80, 82.  
 Behmen, Jacob, books of, 71-173.  
 Bentzon, Th., 248.  
 Berkeley, Dean, 299.  
 Birney, J. G., 115.  
 Black, William, 246.  
 Blake, H. G. O., 23.  
 Blanc, Louis, 301.  
 Bland, J., book of, 173-175.  
 Blessington, Lady, 54.  
 Bodley, J. E. C., 96, 112.  
 Bonaparte, Louis Napoleon, 116.  
 Bonaparte, Napoleon, 34, 132.  
 Books unread, 155.  
 Boston Court House, 15.  
 Boswell, James, 93.  
 Bowen, Prof. Francis, 10.  
 Bradley, Mary E., 187.  
 Breck, Samuel, describes early modes of travel, 74-76.  
 Brentano, Bettine, 44.  
 Brontë, the sisters, 34.  
 Brook Farm Community, formation of, 4; close, 5; George Ripley aids, 7; Emerson on, 12; also, 8, 13, 14, 22.  
 Brooks, Rev. C. T., 7.  
 Brown, Henry Box, 18.  
 Brown, Capt. John, 15, 16, 302.  
 Brown, Dr. John, 26.  
 Browne, Sir Thomas, 164.  
 Browning, Robert, 25, 84, 85.  
 Bruce, R. C., 130.  
 Brunson, William, letter of, 152.  
 Bryant, W. C., on butterflies, 184, 185.  
 Buffalo Bill, 71.  
 Bullivant, Attorney-General, 284.  
 Burns, Anthony, 15.  
 Burns, Robert, 5.  
 Butterflies in Poetry, 179.  
 Cabot, George, 293.  
 Canning, George, 217.  
 Carlyle, Thomas, on Emerson, 2; on Ripley, 12; on Tennyson, 225; also, 6, 7, 23, 24, 305.  
 Catullus, 162.  
 Cave, C., 57.  
 Channing, Rev. W. E., 8, 115.  
 Channing, Rev. W. H., 4.  
 Chapin, Rev. E. H., 82.  
 Chaplin, Baltimore, letter of, 151, 152.  
 Chapman, Mrs. Maria W., 18, 20.  
 Charles II, King of England, 56.  
 Chatham, Lord, 32, 302.



- Chaucer, Geoffrey, English of, 64 ; also, 200.  
 Child and his Dreams, the, 25.  
 Choate, Rufus, on slavery, 124, 125 ; also, 82, 177, 286.  
 Cibber, Colley, 31.  
 Cincinnati, Society of the, 98.  
 Clarendon, Lord, 297.  
 Clemens, S. L., 106, 296.  
 Clement XIV, Pope, on St. Augustine, 169.  
 Cleopatra, 28.  
 Cogswell, J. G., 9.  
 Coleridge, Hartley, described, 205 ; also, 204, 215.  
 Coleridge, S. T., described, 205 ; also, 5, 211, 217, 283.  
 Coleridge, Sarah, 182.  
 Congress, United States, 77.  
 Conway, M. D., 240.  
 Coolbrith, Ina D., 192.  
 Cotton, Rev. John, 279.  
 Cousin, Victor, 6.  
 Cowardice of Culture, The, 288.  
 Craft, Ellen, 18, 121.  
 Craft, William, 18.  
 Curtis, B. R., 82, 83.  
 Curtis, G. W., at Brook Farm, 13 ; also, 282, 288.  
 Cushing, J. P., 99.
- Dalgleish, W. O., 57.  
 Dall, Mrs. C. H. A., 12.  
 Dana, C. A., at Brook Farm, 13.  
 Dana, R. H., lecturing, 83.  
 Dare, Gideon, 220.  
 Darwin, Charles, on butterflies, 183 ; also, 40, 42, 227.  
 Dennie, Joseph, 6.  
 De Quincey, Thomas, described, 205 ; also, 204, 215, 216, 224.  
 De Vere, Aubrey, 226, 233.  
 Dickens, Charles, 109.  
 Dickinson, Anna, 80.  
 Dobson, Austin, 184.  
 Douet, Bishop, on colored race in Jamaica, 126, 127.  
 Douglass, Frederick, and Rynders, 20 ; also, 19, 82, 129.  
 Dwight, J. S., 14.
- Eastlake, Lady, 57, 175.  
 Ellis, A. J., 240.  
 Emerson, R. W., his hundredth birthday, 2 ; on Brook Farm, 12 ; on England, 69 ; also, 4, 8, 15, 25, 73, 78, 79, 82, 108.
- English and American Cousins, 48.  
 Epictetus, 159.  
 Everett, Edward, on English and German universities, 9 ; also, 86.
- Falk, P. L. A., 166.  
 Felton, President C. C., 10.  
 Fichte, J. W., 6.  
 Fielding, Henry, 157.  
 Fitzgerald, Edward, 163.  
 Fitzgerald, R. U. P., 57.  
 Flaxman, John, 278.  
 Fleming, John, 26, 207.  
 Fleming, Marjorie, 26, 40.  
 Fleming, Patrick, 26.  
 Follen, Rev. Charles, 9, 119.  
 Folsom, Abby, 19.  
 Fourier, F. C. M., 162.  
 Fox, C. J., 157.  
 Frémont, Gen. J. C., 305.  
 Froude, J. A., on America, 50 ; also, 24, 55.  
 Fuller, Margaret. See Ossoli.
- Garrison, W. L., 17, 19, 20, 115.  
 George III, King of England, 167.  
 Gibbon, Edward, 141, 156, 158.  
 Gilmore, Gen. Q. A., 151.  
 Gleim, J. W. L., 166.  
 Goethe, J. F. W. von, 7, 102, 166, 167.  
 Goethe, the elder, 102.  
 Gosse, Edmund, 185.  
 Gough, J. B., 80, 81.  
 Gould, Dr. B. A., 129.  
 Grant-Duff, Sir M. E., 198.  
 Gray, Prof. Asa, 189.  
 Gray, Thomas, 115, 208, 221.  
 Greaves, J. P., 15.  
 Greeley, Horace, 11, 21, 22, 88, 246.  
 Gridley, Jeremiah, 285.  
 Grimké sisters, the, 115.  
 Griswold, R. W., 22, 23.  
 Guards, British Grenadier, incident of, 61.  
 Gunby, A. A., 123.  
 Guthrie, Rev. Dr., 275.
- Hale, J. P., 82.  
 Hall, Capt. Basil, 107.  
 Hamilton, Alexander, 288.  
 Hamilton, Captain, 291.  
 Hamilton, Sir William, 229.  
 Hardenberg, Friedrich von (Novallis), 7.  
 Hardy, Thomas, 24.  
 Harris, T. W., 179, 181, 184.

- Harvard University, 6, 9, 10, 49, 98.  
Haven, G. W., 166.  
Hawthorne, Julian, 257.  
Hawthorne, Nathaniel, on Brook Farm, 13; also, 4, 25, 283.  
Hawthorne, Una, 25, 249.  
Haydon, B. R., 71.  
Hazard, Robert, 97.  
Hazlitt, William, 163, 168, 206.  
Hedge, Rev. F. H., 8.  
Hegel, G. F., 6.  
Heine, Heinrich, on slavery, 119; rank, 167; also, 7, 46, 60, 166.  
Heneage, E., 57.  
Henley, W. E., 24.  
Herder, J. G. von, 166.  
Hickes, Rev. George, 64.  
Higginson, Miss A. S., 258.  
Higginson, Stephen, 293.  
Hirsch, 161.  
History in Easy Lessons, 271.  
Hoffmann, E. T. A., 7.  
Holmes, Dr. O. W., 25, 82.  
Homer, 10, 156.  
Hook, Theodore, 49.  
Horace, 164.  
Houghton, Lord (see also Milnes, R. M.), 226, 229.  
House of Commons, British, 53.  
House of Lords, British, 56, 69, 95; compared with U. S. Senate, 58.  
Howard, Bronson, 296.  
Howells, W. D., 57, 296.  
Hughes, Thomas, 226, 236.  
Hugo, Victor, on insect world, 182.  
Hume, David, 56.  
Humphreys, Col., 175.  
Hunt, Mrs. (see Jackson), 268.  
"Intensely Human," 114.  
Irving, Washington, 280.  
Jackson, Francis, 129.  
Jackson, Mrs. Helen (Hunt), 268.  
James, Alice Archer, 200.  
James I, King of England, 56.  
James II, King of England, 294.  
Johnson, Dr. Samuel, 93, 96, 111, 274, 294.  
Jouffroy, T. S., 6.  
Jowett, Dr. Benjamin, 242.  
Kant, Immanuel, 3, 6, 229.  
Keats, John, 33, 60, 185, 204, 230.  
Kent, Chancellor James, 290.  
King, Grace, 123.  
Kossuth, Louis, 295.  
Lamb, Charles, 30, 165, 211, 217.  
Landon, W. S., 54, 230, 231.  
Lavater, J. K., 166.  
Lechford, Thomas, 285.  
Lee, Eliza B., 7.  
Leech, John, 45.  
Lehmann, R. C., on English and American schoolboys, 51.  
Leland, C. G., 246.  
Letters of Mark, 139.  
Lewthwaite, Barbara, 210.  
Lieber, Francis, 9, 119.  
Lincoln, President Abraham, 302.  
Linnæus, Carolus, 181.  
Locke, John, 3.  
Lockhart, J. G., 217.  
Lodge, H. C., 68.  
Long, Corporal, 135.  
Longfellow, Prof. H. W., 1, 25, 58, 104.  
Lowell, Prof. J. R., names Wordsworthshire, 203; also, 25, 139, 283, 299.  
Lundy, Benjamin, 115.  
Lyons, Lord, 49.  
Mann, Horace, organizer of Lyceum lectures, 78, 79; also, 273.  
McIver, Lewis, 57.  
Mackaye, Percy, 185.  
Macready, W. C., 244.  
McKinley, President William, feeling shown at death of, 71, 72.  
Malcolm, Col., 57.  
Marmontel, J. F., 106.  
Maroon wars, 127.  
Marsh, G. F., 27.  
Martial, epigram of, 66.  
Martineau, Harriet, 292.  
Mathews, Cornelius, 10, 11.  
Maupassant, Guy de, 191.  
May, Ida, 122.  
Mellen, G. W. F., 19.  
Meredith, George, 24.  
Middleton, Conyers, 66.  
Milnes, R. M. See Houghton.  
Milton, John, 63.  
Moore, Thomas, 233.  
Moravians, the, 4.  
Morris, Gouverneur, 288.  
Mott, Lucretia, 300.  
Moulton, Louise Chandler, 193.  
Negro, the, General Saxton on, 114; criticised, 115; manhood, 117; treatment in the North, 118, 119; Abolitionists on, 119; in the South,

- 120, 121; incident of, 121, 122; morality, 123-125; in Jamaica, 126, 127; faults, 127, 128; arming, 130-132; stories of, 132, 133, 135; musical quality, 133, 134; courage, 134; religious quality, 135; enfranchisement, 136; letters, 137, 138, 151, 152.
- Newton, C. T., 245.
- New York Tribune, 22, 73.
- North, Christopher (John Wilson), described, 206.
- Norton, Prof. C. E., 233.
- Norton, Mrs. Caroline, 198.
- Novalis (see Hardenberg), 7.
- Orpheus, 30.
- O'Rell, Max, 70.
- Ossoli, Margaret Fuller; early education, 11, 12; also, 4, 156.
- Palmer, W. T., 207.
- Parker, Rev. Theodore, lecturer, 85; on aristocracy of Cincinnati, 103; also, 14, 82, 85, 276.
- Parkman, Francis, 286.
- Pasquier, M., on French spelling, 65.
- Peat, A. B. N., on the Frenchman, 116.
- Peirce, Prof. Benjamin, 161.
- Pepys, Samuel, 297.
- Phillips, Wendell, 18, 19, 82, 87, 128, 276, 286.
- Piatt, Mrs. J. J., 186.
- Pierce, Rev. John, 286.
- Pilgrims, the, 95.
- Pindar, 162.
- Pio Nono, Pope, 178.
- Pitman, Sir Isaac, 240.
- Pitt, William, 56.
- Plato, 43.
- Poe, E. A., 10, 25.
- Pollock, Lady, 244.
- Pollock, Sir Frederick, 244.
- Pollock, W. H., 244.
- Pompadour, Marquise de, 184.
- Porter, Mrs., 30.
- Porter house, in R. I., 97.
- Praed, W. M., 160.
- Pusey, Rev. E. B., 168.
- Putnam, Rev. George, 8.
- Quincy, Edmund, 18, 128, 295.
- Radcliffe College, 84.
- Randolph, John, 295.
- Rankin, Rev. John, 115.
- Rawnsley, Canon, 213.
- Reid, Sir Wemyss, 230.
- Richardson, James, 293.
- Richardson, Samuel, 30.
- Richter, J. P. F. (Jean Paul), 7, 164.
- Ricketson, Daniel, 15.
- Rifle Rangers, the, 74.
- Ripley, George, character, 7; described, 12; on John Dwight, 14.
- Rogers, Samuel, 69, 70, 199, 229.
- Rollins, Mrs. Alice W., 281.
- Roosevelt, President Theodore, 298.
- Rousseau, J. J., 168.
- Ruskin, John, 24, 48, 91, 206, 222.
- Russell, Amelia, 22.
- Russell, Mrs. Thomas, 12.
- Rynders, Isaiah, 20, 21.
- Sainte-Beuve, C. A., 226.
- Salisbury, Lord, 56.
- Sanders, Prince, 126.
- Sawyer, Philetus, 103.
- Saxton, Maj. Gen. Rufus, 114, 137.
- Schiller, J. C. F. von, 7.
- Schleiermacher, F. E. D., 6.
- Schultze, Dr., 197.
- Scott, Sir Walter, 217, 223, 304.
- Scudder, S. H., on butterflies, 183; also, 179, 197.
- Sedgwick, Catharine M., 290.
- Seward, Anna, 93.
- Shakespeare, William, 17, 21, 28, 29, 33, 46, 64, 108, 143.
- Shaw, Col. R. G., 131.
- Shelley, F. B., 220, 221.
- Shelley, Mrs., 221.
- Sidney, Sir Philip, 33.
- Silver Grays, the corps of, 75.
- Simpson, Margaret, 216.
- Slaves, American, problem of, 114, 117.
- Smith, Prof. Goldwin, 95.
- Smith, Prof. Henry, 243.
- Smith, Rev. Sydney, 278.
- Smith, W. M., 176.
- Solomons (violin player), 167.
- Southey, Robert, described, 205; also, 217, 218.
- Sparks, Jared, 46.
- "Spectator," the, on Birthday Honors, 56.
- Spencer, Herbert, 226.
- Spenser, Edmund, 65.
- Stephen, Sir Leslie, 234.
- Stephen, Sir James, 242.
- Stepniak, S. M., 226.
- Stevenson, R. L., 24.

- Stanhope, Lord, 111.  
 Stedman, E. C., 199.  
 Steward, Emma, letters of, 137, 138.  
 Steward, Solomon, 137.  
 Story, Justice Joseph, 290.  
 Story, W. W., 231.  
 Streater, John, 172.  
 Street, A. B., 199.  
 Sumner, Charles, as lecturer, 86;  
   also, 79, 82, 128, 285.  
 Sunny Side of the Transcendental  
   Period, 1.  
 Swift, Lindsay, on Brook Farm, 4,  
   5, 8.  
 Swinburne, A. C., 41.  
  
 Tabley, Lord de, 199.  
 Talleyrand, Marquis de, 228.  
 Taylor, Bayard, 82.  
 Taylor, Father, 12.  
 Tennyson, Alfred, 24, 55, 224, 232, 234.  
 Tennyson, C. T., 185.  
 Thacher, Oxenbridge, 288.  
 Thackeray, W. M., declines lecture,  
   89; story of, 111; also, 79.  
 Thoreau, H. D., on a moth, 184;  
   also, 16, 22, 23, 25.  
 Thorold, Bishop, 139.  
 Thumb, Tom ("General"), 71.  
 Ticknor, George, 9.  
 Torbert, G. L., 77.  
 Torrey, Prof. H. W., 285.  
 Transcendental Period, the, defini-  
   tion of, 3; Brook Farm, 4, 5;  
   "Disciples of Newness," 10, 11;  
   members defined, 12; effect of,  
   16, 17; 21.  
 Tubman, Harriet, 18.  
 Tudors, the, 59.  
 Turenne, H. de L., 39.  
 Turner, Nat., 118.  
 Twain, Mark (see Clemens), 106.  
 Tyndall, John, compares American  
   and English audiences, 52.  
  
 Ulysses, 29.  
 United States Senate, compared with  
   House of Lords, 58, 82.  
 Urban IV, Pope, 102.  
 Urquhart, David, 177.  
  
 Vanderbilt, Commodore, 99.  
 Varro, Terentius, 296.  
  
 Vaugelas, 66.  
 Venable, W. H., 244.  
 Verdin, J., 57.  
 Victoria, Queen, 37, 38, 296.  
 Victorian Epoch, close of the, 226.  
 Voiture, Vincent, 66.  
 Voltaire, F. M. A. de, 287.  
  
 Wade, Thomas, 191.  
 Wales, Prince of, 126.  
 Walker, David, his appeal, 116.  
 Walpole, Horace, on his countrymen,  
   60.  
 Waring, G. E., 304.  
 Warren, Dr. J. C., 8.  
 Washington, Booker T., 128-130.  
 Washington, George, 280.  
 Webster, Daniel, 82.  
 Webster, Noah, 66.  
 Wellington, Duke of, 34, 61.  
 Wells, H. G., on English student, 50,  
   51.  
 Wheeler, C. S., 6.  
 Whipple, E. P., 82.  
 Whiteing, R., 68.  
 Whitman, Walt, on butterflies, 194-  
   196; also, 2, 25, 164, 197.  
 Whittier, J. G., and foreign countries,  
   177; also, 25, 58, 115.  
 Whole World's Temperance Con-  
   vention, 81.  
 Wieland, C. M., 166.  
 Willigis, Bishop, 102.  
 William IV, King of England, 56.  
 Wilson, John, described, 206; also,  
   216. (See also North, Christo-  
   pher.)  
 Woodhull, Mrs., 128.  
 Wordsworth, Dorothy, 206, 211.  
 Wordsworth, William, 6; centre of  
   Lake District, 203, 204; described,  
   204, 205; early days, 207; early  
   poems, 208; also, 5, 6, 176, 199.  
 Wordsworth, William (of Capri), 213.  
 Wordsworth, Mrs., 206, 212.  
 Wordsworthshire, 203.  
 World's Temperance Convention,  
   81.  
  
 Yale University, 49, 98.  
 Yerrington, J. M. W., 19.  
  
 Xerxes, 288.

**The Riverside Press**

*Electrotypes and printed by H. O. Houghton & Co.  
Cambridge, Mass., U. S. A.*











from  
res a  
out

